Between Civil Wars: The Caliphate of Muʿāwiyah
This volume presents for the first time in English Ṭabari's complete account of the twenty-year long reign of the fifth caliph, Mu'āwiyyah (661–680). The importance of this account lies partly in Ṭabari's quotation of major portions of the work of earlier authors, such as Abū Mikhnaf and other eighth-century compilers. It is also significant because Ṭabari's selection of themes has had a decisive influence on modern interpretations of this period, particularly on the identification of what the important issues were in the works of Henri Lammens and Julius Wellhausen. Here one can read the exciting account of the Khānjī revolt of Mustawrid ibn Ullīfah, the impressive but controversial record of the governorship of Ziyād b. Abihi, the entertaining escapades of the poet Farazdaq in his youth, and the tragic story of Ḥuhr ibn 'Adī. Ṭabari's presentation of different points of view about these and other events makes his account an indispensable source for early Islamic history.
THE HISTORY OF AL-ŢABARĪ
AN ANNOTATED TRANSLATION

VOLUME XVIII

Between Civil Wars:
The Caliphate of Muʿāwiya
A.D. 661–680/A.H. 40–60
The History of al-Ṭabarî

Editorial Board
Ihsan Abbas, American University of Beirut
C. E. Bosworth, The University of Manchester
Jacob Lassner, Wayne State University, Detroit
Franz Rosenthal, Yale University
Ehsan Yar-Shater, Columbia University (General Editor)

SUNY
SERIES IN NEAR EASTERN STUDIES
Said Amir Arjomand, Editor
The History of al-Tabarî
(Ta'rikh al-rusul wa'l-mulūk)

Volume xviii

Between Civil Wars:
The Caliphate of Mu'āwiyyah

translated and annotated
by
Michael G. Morony
University of California, Los Angeles

State University of New York Press
Acknowledgements

In 1971 the General Editor proposed to the UNESCO to include a translation of al-Ṭabari's *History* in its Collection of Representative Works. UNESCO agreed, but the Commission in charge of Arabic works favored other priorities. Deeming the project worthy, the Iranian Institute of Translation and Publication, which collaborated with UNESCO, agreed to undertake the task. After the upheavals of 1979, assistance was sought from the National Endowment for the Humanities. The invaluable encouragement and support of the Endowment is here gratefully acknowledged.

The General Editor wishes to thank sincerely also the participating scholars, who have made the realization of this project possible; the Board of Editors for their selfless assistance; Professor Franz Rosenthal for his many helpful suggestions in the formulation and application of the editorial policy; Professor Jacob Lassner for his painstaking and meticulous editing; and Dr. Susan Mango of the National Endowment for the Humanities for her genuine interest in the project and her advocacy of it.
Preface

The History of Prophets and Kings (Ta'rikh al-rusul wa'l-muluk) by Abū Ja'far Muḥammad b. ḽarī al-Ṭabarī (839–923), here rendered as the History of al-Ṭabarī, is by common consent the most important universal history produced in the world of Islam. It has been translated here in its entirety for the first time for the benefit of non-Arabists, with historical and philological notes for those interested in the particulars of the text.

Ṭabarī's monumental work explores the history of the ancient nations, with special emphasis on biblical peoples and prophets, the legendary and factual history of ancient Iran, and, in great detail, the rise of Islam, the life of the Prophet Muḥammad, and the history of the Islamic world down to the year 915. The first volume of this translation will contain a biography of al-Ṭabarī and a discussion of the method, scope, and value of his work. It will also provide information on some of the technical considerations that have guided the work of the translators.

The History has been divided here into 38 volumes, each of which covers about two hundred pages of the original Arabic text in the Leiden edition. An attempt has been made to draw the dividing lines between the individual volumes in such a way that each is to some degree independent and can be read as such. The page numbers of the original in the Leiden edition appear on the margins of the translated volumes.

Al-Ṭabarī very often quotes his sources verbatim and traces the chain of transmission (īṣnād) to an original source. The chains of transmitters are, for the sake of brevity, rendered by only a dash (—) between the individual links in the chain.
Thus, According to Ibn Ḥumayd—Salamah—Ibn Ishaq means that al-Ṭabarî received the report from Ibn Ḥumayd who said that he was told by Salamah, who said that he was told by Ibn Ishaq, and so on. The numerous subtle and important differences in the original Arabic wording have been disregarded.

The table of contents at the beginning of each volume gives a brief survey of the topics dealt with in that particular volume. It also includes the headings and subheadings as they appear in al-Ṭabarî’s text, as well as those occasionally introduced by the translator.

Well-known place-names, such as, for instance, Mecca, Baghdad, Jerusalem, Damascus, and the Yemen, are given in their English spellings. Less common place-names, which are the vast majority, are transliterated. Biblical figures appear in the accepted English spelling. Iranian names are usually transcribed according to their Arabic forms, and the presumed Iranian forms are often discussed in the footnotes.

Technical terms have been translated wherever possible, but some, such as qāḍī and imām, have been retained in Arabic forms. Others that cannot be translated with sufficient precision have been retained and italicized as well as footnoted.

The annotation aims chiefly at clarifying difficult passages, identifying individuals and place-names, and discussing textual difficulties. Much leeway has been left to the translators to include in the footnotes whatever they consider necessary and helpful.

The bibliographies list all the sources mentioned in the annotation.

The index in each volume contains all the names of persons and places referred to in the text, as well as those mentioned in the notes as far as they refer to the medieval period. It does not include the names of modern scholars. A general index, it is hoped, will appear after all the volumes have been translated.

Ehsan Yar-Shater
Translator's Foreword / 1

Between Civil Wars: The Caliphate of, Mu'āwiyyah

The Events of the Year 40 (660/661) / 2
The Rendering of Allegiance to al-Ḥasan b. ʿAli / 2

The Events of the Year 41 (661/662) / 7
Al-Ḥasan's surrender of al-Kūfah to Mu'āwiyyah / 9
The departure of al-Ḥasan and al-Ḥusayn for al-Madīnah / 11
The Khārijītes at Shahrazūr / 12
Mu'āwiyyah's order to kill the sons of Ziyād / 14
Why ʿAbdallāh b. ʿĀmir was put in charge of al- Başrah and some events during his Activity there / 18

The Events of the Year 42 (662/663) / 20
What happened to the Khārijītes / 21

The Events of the Year 43 (663/664) / 32
The killing of al-Mustawrid b. ʿUllifah / 33
The Events of the Year 44 (664/665) / 71

The Events of the Year 45 (665/666) / 76
Ziyād's governorship over al-Baṣra / 76

The Events of the Year 46 (666/667) / 88
The death of ʿAbd al-Rahmān b. Khālid b. al-Walīd / 88

The Events of the Year 47 (667/668) / 91

The Events of the Year 48 (668/669) / 93

The Events of the Year 49 (669/670) / 94

The Events of the Year 50 (670/671) / 96
Al-Faradzaq's flight from Ziyād / 104
Al-Ḥakam b. ʿAmr raids al-Ashall / 119

The Events of the Year 51 (671/672) / 122
Ḥujr b. ʿAdi's execution / 122
Those whom Ziyād sent to Muʿawiyah / 144
Ḥujr's companions who were killed / 151
Ḥujr's companions who were saved / 152

The Events of the Year 52 (672) / 165

The Events of the Year 53 (672/673) / 166
How Ziyād b. Sumayyah perished / 167
How al-Rabiʿ b. Ziyād al-Ḥārithi died / 170

The Events of the Year 54 (673/674) / 172
Why Muʿawiyah dismissed Saʿīd and appointed Marwān as governor over al-Madīnah / 173
How ʿUbaydallāh b. Ziyād became governor over Khurāsān / 175
Contents

The Events of the Year 55 (674/675) / 180
Why Mu'awiyah dismissed 'Abdallah b. 'Amr b. Ghaylan and appointed Ubaydallah over al-Basrah / 180

The Events of the Year 56 (675/676) / 183
Why Mu'awiyah made his Son, Yazid, heir apparent / 183

The Events of the Year 57 (676/677) / 191

The Events of the Year 58 (677/678) / 192
Why Ubaydallah b. Ziyad killed the Kharijites / 196

The Events of the Year 59 (678/679) / 199
Why Mu'awiyah appointed Abd al-Rahman b. Ziyad as governor of Khurasan / 199
How Mu'awiyah dismissed and re-appointed Ubaydallah as governor of al-Basrah / 201
Why Yasid b. Mufarrigh ridiculed the sons of Ziyad / 202

The Events of the Year 60 (679/680) / 208
The length of Mu'awiyah's reign / 210
Mu'awiyah's last illness / 211
Who led the prayer over Mu'awiyah when he died / 213
Mu'awiyah's lineage and his Agnomen / 215
Mu'awiyah's wives and children / 215
Some of Mu'awiyah's Affairs and Conduct / 216

Bibliography / 227

Index / 233
Translator's Foreword

The reign of Muʿāwiyah b. Abi Sufyān as Caliph occupied the two decades between the first and second civil wars among Muslims in the seventh century. Ţabariʾs account of this period is comparatively thin. He covers it in half the space he devoted to the first civil war and in the same amount of space that he gave to the three-year reign of Muʿāwiyah’s son and successor, Yazīd. In addition, Ţabariʾs selection of events overwhelmingly concentrates on Iraq and Khurāsān during these years, and his information is drawn mainly from Iraqi sources.

Over sixty percent of this section comes from the earlier works of Abū Mikhnaf and 'Umar b. Shabbah. The works of Abū Mikhnaf are quoted mainly via Hishām b. Muḥammad al-Kalbi and are used especially for the events at al-Kūfah, the Khārijītes, and the affair of Ḥujr b. 'Adī. 'Umar b. Shabbah’s Book of Information About the People of al-Baṣrah (Kitāb akhbār ahl al-Baṣrah) is quoted directly by Ţabari not only for events at al-Baṣrah, but also for events in Syria and the Hijāz.

Except for Ziyād’s inaugural speech at al-Baṣrah in 665 and parallel passages in C. E. J. Whitting’s translation of Ibn Ṭaḥātabā’s Kitāb al-Fakhri (London, 1974), the material in this volume has not been available in English before. However, the section on Muʿāwiyah in Baladhuriʾs Ansāb al-Ashrāf was translated into Italian by Giorgio Levi della Vida and Olga Pinto as Il Califfo Muʿawyya I, secondo il “Kitāb Ansāb al-Asrāf” (Rome, 1938). Special thanks go to Abdullah al-Askar who helped to check this translation.

Michael Morony
University of California, Los Angeles
In the year 40 (May 17, 660-May 6, 661), allegiance was rendered to al-Hasan b. 'Ali for the Caliphate. The first to render allegiance to him is said to have been Qays b. Sa'd who said to him, "Hold out your hand, and I will pledge allegiance to you on condition [that you follow] the Book of God, Almighty and Great, and the example (sunnah) of His Prophet, and fight the violators." Al-Hasan answered him, "... on condition [that I follow] the Book of God and the example of His Prophet, for that includes every stipulation." So Qays rendered allegiance to him and was silent, and the people (also) pledged their allegiance to him.


---

1. *Al-muhillān* were originally a group of pre-Islamic tribes west of al-Madinah whose members attacked caravans during the sacred truce months. See *Jāhiz, Hayawān*, VII, 216–17; *Yaʿqūbī, Taʾrīkh*, I, 314–15; and Bukhārī, *Ṣaḥīh*, VI, 12. This became a term for those who permitted shedding blood, especially the blood of members of Muhammad's family.

2. Cairo reads: "Shabbawayhi." 'Abdallāh b. Aḥmad b. Shabbawayh al-Marwazi was a well-known authority on hadith. There is no manuscript authority for the reading, Mattawayhi, at least in this passage.


The Rendering of Allegiance to al-Hasan b. 'Ali

‘Ali put Qays b. Sa‘d in charge of his Iraqi advance forces (marching) toward Adharbayjân, and in charge of Adharbayjân’s territory. He also put him in charge of the Shurtat al-Khamis which the Arabs instituted. This was a force of forty thousand men who pledged allegiance to ‘Ali until death. Qays continued to postpone that expedition until ‘Ali was killed and the people of Iraq chose al-Hasan b. ‘Ali as Caliph. Al-Hasan did not favor fighting, but intended to take for himself what he could from Mu‘awiyyah and then join the community. He knew that Qays b. Sa‘d did not agree with his point of view, so he dismissed him and appointed ‘Abdallâh b. ‘Abbâs as commander. When ‘Abdallâh b. ‘Abbâs learned what al-Hasan intended to take for himself, he wrote to Mu‘awiyyah asking him for a guarantee of safe-conduct with the added condition that he be allowed to keep the wealth which he had acquired. So Mu‘awiyyah stipulated that for him.

thousand men. Mu'awiya also advanced with the Syrians and camped at Maskin. While al-Hasan was at al-Madā'in someone in the army announced, "Qays b. Sa'd has surely been killed, so flee!" So they fled, having plundered the pavilion of al-Hasan, even fighting him for a carpet that was under him. Al-Hasan left and stayed at the White Palace in al-Madā'in. At that time the paternal uncle of al-Mukhtar b. Abi 'Ubayd, Sa'd b. Mas'ūd, was the governor of al-Madā'in. Al-Mukhtar, who was a young boy, asked him, "Would you have wealth and honor?" When Sa'd asked him what he meant, al-Mukhtar said, "Put al-Hasan in fetters and use him to ask Mu'awiya for a guarantee of safe-conduct." Sa'd responded, "God's curse upon you! Shall I fall upon the son of the daughter of God's Messenger and put him in fetters! What an evil man you are."

When al-Hasan saw that rule was beyond his grasp, he sent to Mu'awiya seeking peace, and Mu'awiya sent 'Abdallāh b. 'Āmir and 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Samurah b. Ḥabīb b. 'Abd Shams to him. When they came to al-Hasan at al-Madā'in, they granted him what he wished and arranged peace with him on condition that, among other things, he be allowed to take five million (dirhams) from the treasury of al-Kufah. Al-Hasan

---

13. Maskin was the district along the Dujayl Canal west of the Tigris River above Baghdad. See Le Strange, Lands, 51.

14. The White Palace was the former Sasanian royal residence in that part of al-Madā'in called al-Madinah al-Atiqah, "the Old City," (i.e., Ctesiphon) by the Arabs. It remained in use until its demolition was begun by the Caliph al-Mansūr [136-58/754-75], and then it remained in ruins until it was completely demolished by Caliph al-Muktasif [289-92/902-8] in about 290(903). Al-Muktasif had the materials used to build the Tāj Palace in Baghdad. See EI², s.v. al-Madā'in.

15. Al-Mukhtar b. Abi 'Ubayd (d. 67/687) was to lead a Shi'i rising in al-Kufah, 66-67/685-87. See Kharbūtli, Al-Mukhtar al-Thaqafi, and 'A. A. 'Abd Dixon, Umayyad Caliphate, 25-76.

16. O reads: "bring him to Mu'awiya."

17. C reads: "what an evil man that would make me."

18. 'Abdallāh b. 'Amir (5-59/626-80) was a native of Mecca who had conquered Fars and Khurāsān as governor of al-Baṣrah, 29-35/649-55) See EI², s.v. 'Abd Allah b. 'Amir.

19. 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Samurah (d. 50/670) was a native of Mecca, conquered Sīstān under 'Abdallāh b. 'Āmir, 31-35/651-55 and joined Mu'awiya in Syria after the Battle of the Camel in 36/657 See C. E. Bosworth, Sistān under the Arabs, 17-22; and EI², s.v. 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Samura.

20. Al-Kufah was the Muslim Arab garrison city (mīṣr) and provincial capital on the Euphrates River near modern Najaf. See EI², s.v. al-Kufah.
then rose among the people of Iraq saying, "O people of Iraq, three things make me glad to be rid of you: your killing of my father, your stabbing of me, and your plundering of my possessions." The people submitted to Mu'awiyyah, and, when Mu'awiyyah entered al-Kūfah, the people rendered allegiance to him.

[According to] Ziyād b. 'Abdallāh—'Awānah1 gave an account similar to that of al-Masrūqi—'Uthmān b. 'Abd al-Raḥmān. He added to it: Al-Ḥasan wrote to Mu'awiyyah concerning peace and asked for a guarantee of safe-conduct. When he told al-Ḥusayn2 and 'Abdallāh b. Ja'far3 about it, al-Ḥusayn said to him, "I implore you, by God, not to believe the story of Mu'awiyyah but to believe the story of 'Ali." Al-Ḥasan retorted, "Shut up! I know more about the matter than you do." Now when the letter of al-Ḥasan b. 'Ali reached Mu'awiyyah, the latter sent 'Abdallāh b. 'Amir and 'Abd al-Raḥmān b. Samurah, who came to al-Madā'in, and granted al-Ḥasan what he wanted. Al-Ḥasan then wrote to Qays b. Sa'd, who was in charge of his vanguard with twelve thousand men, ordering him to submit to Mu'awiyyah. At that, Qays b. Sa'd rose among the people saying, "O people, choose [between] submitting to a leader of error or fighting without a leader." They replied, "No, we choose instead to submit to a leader of error." So they rendered allegiance to Mu'awiyyah and Qays b. Sa'd left them. Al-Ḥasan had already made peace with Mu'awiyyah on condition that he concede to him what was in his treasury plus the revenue (kharāj)4 of Dārābjird5 and that 'Ali not be reviled in his hearing. So he took what was in his treasury at al-Kūfah which amounted to five million dirhams.

21. 'Awānah b. al-Ḥakam al-Kalbī [d. 147/764 or 153/770] was a blind Kūfī narrator who composed two historical works on the life of Mu'awiyyah and the Banū Umayyāh. See EI², s.v. 'Awāna b. al-Ḥakam al-Kalbī.
22. Al-Ḥusayn b. 'Ali (461-80) was al-Ḥasan's younger brother. See EI², s.v. Al-Ḥusayn b. 'Ali.
23. 'Abdallāh b. Ja'far b. Abī Ṭalīb [d. 80/699 or 85/704] was a nephew of 'Ali. See EI², s.v. 'Abd Allāh b. Dja'far.
24. Kharāj was a form of tax or tribute. See D. Dennett, Conversion and the Poll Tax, 12–13; and F. Løkkegaard, Islamic Taxation, index.
25. Dārābjird is a city and district in eastern Fars. See Le Strange, Lands, 288–9.
In this year al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah26 led the people in the pilgrimage. (According to) Mūsā b. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān—‘Uthmān b. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān al-Khuza‘ī27 Abū ‘Abd al-Raḥmān—Ismā‘īl b. Rāshid: When it was time for the pilgrimage—that is, in the year in which ‘Ali was killed—al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah wrote a letter which he forged according to Mu‘awiyyah's style,28 and led the people in the pilgrimage in this year. It is said that he stood at 'Arafat on the Day of Moistening and slaughtered on the Day of 'Arafat,29 fearing lest his position be noticed. It was also said that al-Mughirah did so because he learned that 'Utbah b. Abi Su'fyan would replace him the following morning as the official in charge of the (pilgrimage) season, and he therefore rushed the pilgrimage.

In this year Mu‘awiyyah was rendered allegiance as Caliph in Jerusalem (Iliyā).30 (According to) Mūsā b. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān—‘Uthmān b. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān—Ismā‘īl b. Rāshid: He was previously called Commander31 in Syria. I was told according to Abū Mushīr—Sa‘īd b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz: ‘Ali was called Commander of the Faithful (Amīr al-Mu‘mīnīn) in Iraq, while Mu‘awiyyah was called Commander in Syria. But when ‘Ali was killed,32 Mu‘awiyyah was called Commander of the Faithful.

26. Al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bah was a native of Ta‘if, a member of the Banū Thaqīf, and had been governor of al-‘Baṣrah, 15–17(636–38).
29. The Day of Moistening (yawm al-tawwiyah) is the eighth of Dhū al-Ḥijjah when the pilgrims provide their animals and themselves with water for standing at ‘Arafat on the following day. See EP, s.v. Ĥadjīd.
30. Iliyā in Arabic comes from Aelia Capitolina, the Roman name for Jerusalem. See EP, s.v. al-Kuds.
31. “Commander” (amīr) was used of generals and military governors. See EP, s.v. Amīr.
The
Events of the Year

4 I

(MAY 7, 661—APRIL 25, 662)

Among the events of this year was al-Hasan b. 'Ali's surrender of power to Mu'awiyah, the latter's entry into al-Kufah, and the rendering of allegiance to Mu'awiyah as Caliph by the people of al-Kufah.

I was told by 'Abdallah b. Aḥmad al-Marrūdhī—his father—Sulaymān—'Abdallah—Yūnus—al-Zuhri: When the people of Iraq acknowledged al-Hasan b. 'Ali as Caliph, he began to impose conditions on them, (saying), "You must be totally obedient, make peace with whom I make peace, and fight whom I fight." The people of Iraq had misgivings about their situation when he imposed these conditions upon them, and they said, "This is no master for us since he does not want to fight." So shortly after they acknowledged him, al-Hasan was stabbed (and wounded, but) not fatally. His dislike for them increased, and he grew more afraid of them. He corresponded with Mu'awiyah and sent conditions to him saying, "Grant me this and I shall be totally obedient, provided that you fulfill [these conditions] for me." Al-Hasan's scroll came into Mu'awiyah's hand. Mu'awiyah, however, had previously sent al-Hasan a blank
scroll sealed at the bottom and had written to him, "Put whatever condition you wish [to make] on this scroll which I have sealed at the bottom and it will be yours." When (the scroll) reached al-Hasan, he doubled the conditions which he had asked of Mu‘awiyyah previously and kept it with him. Mu‘awiyyah meanwhile kept the scroll of al-Hasan which contained the requests the latter had sent him.

When Mu‘awiyyah and al-Hasan met, al-Hasan asked him to grant him the conditions made by him in the document which Mu‘awiyyah had sealed at the bottom. But Mu‘awiyyah refused and said, I grant you the requests you made originally in your letter to me, for I had done so already when I received your letter." Al-Hasan replied, "[But] I had conditions when I received your letter, and you agreed to fulfill them." Since they argued over them, none of al-Hasan’s conditions were met.34

When they assembled at al-Kufah, ‘Amr b. al-‘As35 had been talking with Mu‘awiyyah, and urged him to bid al-Hasan rise and address the people. But Mu‘awiyyah disliked that and asked, "Don’t you want me to address the people?"36 ‘Amr replied, "I intend to show the people his incompetence," and he kept it up until Mu‘awiyyah gave in to him and went out and addressed the people. Then he ordered someone to call upon al-Hasan b. ‘Ali, "Rise, O Hasan, and speak to the people." So (al-Hasan) began a spontaneous impromptu speech with the shahadah37 and then continued, "O people, God has guided you with the first of us, and spared your blood with the last of us. This regime has a certain duration, and the world is subject to change. God, Almighty and Great, said to His Prophet, "If I knew, per-

33. For examples of first (seventh) century Arabic protocols and documents sealed at the bottom, see A. Grohmann, From the World of Arabic Papyri.


35. ‘Amr b. al-‘As (d. ca. 42 [663]), the Muslim conqueror of Egypt (19–21 [640–42]), had joined Mu‘awiyyah after the Battle of the Camel during the first civil war. He was Mu‘awiyyah’s representative at the arbitration at Aḥrūḥ, 38 [658], and his governor of Egypt. See EI, s. v. ‘Amr ibn al-‘As.

36. C reads: "Why do you want me to have him speak to the people?"

37. The shahadah is the Muslim declaration that there is only one God and Muhammad is His Messenger. For an example of the form of the shahadah that may have been used during the reign of Mu‘awiyyah, see below, p. 171 [Ṭabarî, II, 163]. See also EI, s. v. Shahāda.
haps it is a temptation for you and a delight for a while." When he said that, Mu'āwiyah told him to sit down, and remained furious with 'Amr saying, "This was your idea!" Al-Ḥasan stayed at al-Madinah.

I was told by 'Umar—'Ali b. Muḥammad—Al-Ḥasan surrendered al-Kufah to Mu'āwiyah, and Mu'āwiyah entered it five (days) before the end of Rabi' I (before July 30, 661)—or, alternatively, before the end of Jumādā I 41 (before September 27, 661).

**Al-Ḥasan's Surrender of al-Kūfah to Mu'āwiyah**

I was told by 'Abdallah b. Ahmad—his father—Sulaymān b. al-Fadl—'Abdallah—Yūnus—al-Zuhri: When 'Abdallah b. 'Abbās learned that al-Ḥasan intended to ask Mu'āwiyah for a guarantee of safe-conduct for himself, he (also) wrote to Mu'āwiyah asking him for security on condition that he be allowed to keep the wealth that he had acquired. So Mu'āwiyah stipulated that for him. And when Mu'āwiyah sent Ibn 'Amir to him with a large force of cavalry, 'Abdallah went out to them at night and joined them, leaving the army of which he was in charge, including Qays b. Sa'd, without a commander. (When) al-Ḥasan made terms for himself (and) acknowledged Mu'āwiyah, the shurtat al-khamis made Qays b. Sa'd their commander. He and they pledged to fight Mu'āwiyah until terms should be made to allow the supporters and followers of 'Alī to keep their wealth and their lives and whatever they had acquired during the civil war.

When Mu'āwiyah was finished with 'Abdallah b. 'Abbās and al-Ḥasan, he was free to employ stratagems against (the) man whom he considered to be the most important person in this

---

38. Qur'ān 21: 111. That is, God had guided them by means of 'Alī, and al-Ḥasan's abdication had prevented further bloodshed. Mu'āwiyah's power would not last forever, and at some future date others might have the opportunity to take power.

39. 'Ali b. Muḥammad b. 'Abdallah b. Abī Sayf, Abū al-Ḥasan al-Madā'ini (1735–231 [752–845]) belonged to the 'Abd Shams clan of Quraysh. He was born at al-Basrah, lived at al-Madā’in, and died in Baghdad. He is credited with over two hundred works on history and literature. See EI’, s. v. al-Madā’ini.

respect and who had forty thousand (men) with him. Mu'awiyah, 'Amr, and the Syrians had camped with them. Mu'awiyah (now) sent a message to Qays b. Sa'd to remind him of God, saying, "For whom are you fighting, since he to whom you gave your obedience has acknowledged me?" But Qays refused to yield to him until Mu'awiyah sent him a document which he had sealed at the bottom and told (him), "Write what you want on this document and it will be yours." When 'Amr told Mu'awiyah not to give him that but to fight him, Mu'awiyah replied, "Calm down! We would not be able to kill them until they had killed an equal number of Syrians, and what good would life be after that? By God, I will never fight him until I have no other alternative." When Mu'awiyah sent that document to him, Qays asked in it that he and the supporters of 'Ali be exempt from punishment for the lives and wealth they took. He did not ask Mu'awiyah for wealth in that document of his. When Mu'awiyah granted his request, Qays and those who were with him submitted to him.

When the civil war broke out, five persons were regarded as the most cunning. The Arabs who had (useful) opinions and stratagems were said to be Mu'awiyah b. Abi Sufyân, 'Amr b. al-'As, al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah, and Qays b. Sa'd, as well as 'Abdallah b. Budayl al-Khuza'i among the Muhâjirûn. Qays and Ibn Budayl sided with 'Ali, while al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah and 'Amr sided with Mu'awiyah, although al-Mughirah remained neutral at Ta'if until both arbiters were chosen and met at Adhruh.

According to another report, peace was concluded between al-Hasan and Mu'awiyah in Rabi' II 41 (August 4—September 1, 659)
The Events of the Year 41

661) and Mu‘awiyah entered al-Kūfah at the beginning of Jumarah I (September 2, 661). Yet another account claims that he entered it in the month of Rabī’ II. This is what al-Waqidi says.47

In this year ‘Ali’s sons, al-Ḥasan and al-Ḥusayn, left al-Kūfah for al-Madinah.

The Departure of al-Ḥasan and al-Ḥusayn for al-Madinah

When peace was made between al-Ḥasan and Mu‘awiyah at Maskin, (al-Ḥasan) rose—as I have been told on the authority of Ziyād al-Bakkā‘i—‘Awānah—to speak to the people, saying, “O people of Iraq, I am glad to be rid of you for three reasons: your killing of my father, your stabbing of me, and your plundering of my possessions.” Then al-Ḥasan, al-Ḥusayn, and ‘Abdallah b. Ja‘far left with their servants48 and baggage and went to al-Kūfah. When al-Ḥasan arrived there, having recovered from his wounds, he went out to the mosque (masjid) of al-Kūfah and said, “O people of al-Kūfah, be God-fearing toward your neighbors and guests and toward the members of the family of your Prophet, from whom God removed sinfulness and whom He purified completely.” And the people began to weep. Then they departed for al-Madinah. ‘Awānah continued: The people of al-Basrah50 refused him the revenue (kharaj) of Dārābjird, saying, “It is our booty (fay’).”51 And when al-Ḥasan left

46. Abu ‘Abdallāh Muḥammad b. ‘Umar al-Waqidi (13o-207 [747/8-822/3]) was a native of al-Madinah who moved to Baghdad and authored works on historical and religious subjects. See EI’, s.v. al-Wākidi.

47. According to Ilyās of Naṣibin, al-Ḥasan made peace with Mu‘awiyah on Sunday, twenty-one Rabī’ (July 25, 661). See F. Baethgen, Fragmenta, 25, Ibn Khayyāt, Ta’rikh, I, 234, reports that peace was concluded either in Rabī’ II (August) or in Jumarah I (September).


49. ‘anhum, that is, the family.

50. Al-BAṣra was the Muslim Arab garrison city (miṣr) and provincial capital near the Tigris-Euphrates estuary in lower Iraq, just to the south of the modern city. See EI’, s.v. al-BAṣra.

51. Fay’, “permanent booty,” was the income from tribute or taxes from which the stipends of Muslim soldiers were paid.
for al-Madinah, people confronted him at al-Qadisiyyah\(^{52}\) and accused him of having demeaned the Arabs.

During this year the Kharijites\(^{53}\) who stood aside at Shahrazur\(^{54}\) in the days of 'Ali rebelled against Mu'awiyah.

**The Kharijites at Shahrazur**

I was told on the authority of Ziyād—'Awānāh: Before al-Ḥasan left al-Kūfah, Mu'awiyah came and halted at al-Nukhaylah.\(^{55}\) At that, the five hundred Ḥarūriyyah\(^{56}\) who had been standing aside at Shahrazur with Farwah b. Nawfal al-Ashja'i said, "Since someone about whom there is no doubt has come, [let us] march against Mu'awiyah and wage *jihād*\(^{57}\) against him." They approached, with Farwah b. Nawfal in charge of them, and entered al-Kūfah. When Mu'awiyah dispatched some of the Syrian cavalry against them, they routed the Syrians. So Mu'awiyah said to the Kufans, "By God, you will have no guarantee of safe-conduct where I am concerned until you deal with your own misfortunes." When the Kufans went forth against the Kharijites and fought them,\(^{58}\) the latter said to them, "Woe unto you! What do you want from us? Is not Mu'awiyah both our enemy and yours? Leave us alone so that we may fight him. If we should defeat him, we will have protected

---

\(^{52}\) Al-Qadisiyyah was a town south of modern Najaf, nineteen miles from al-Kūfah, where the Muslims had defeated the Persians in 16(637) and marked the border of Iraq. See EI', s.v. al-Qadisiyya.

\(^{53}\) The Kharijites (Khawarij, sg. Khariji) were "seceders" who had rebelled against 'Ali after he agreed to arbitration at Siffin. See EI', s.v. al-Khawāridj.

\(^{54}\) Shahrazur was a town north of Hulwān on the border between Iraq and Iran. See Le Strange, Lands, 190.

\(^{55}\) Al-Nukhaylah was the mustering and demobilization point for Kufan soldiers just outside the city. See Dinawari, Akhbār, 176; Mubarrad, Kāmil, 665; and Yāqūt, Mu'jam, IV, 771. S. El-'Ali, "Mintaqat al-Kūfa," 238, has identified its location near the modern Jīr al-'Abbāsiyyat.

\(^{56}\) The Ḥarūriyyah were those opponents of 'Ali's agreement to arbitration who had seceded to the village of Ḥarūrā' near al-Kūfah in 37(658). This continued to be a common designation for the Kharijites. See EI' s.v. Ḥarūrā'.

\(^{57}\) *jihād* is making an effort on God's behalf, including warfare against unbelievers. Its use implies that they considered their enemies to be unbelievers. See EI' s.v. Dījāhād.

\(^{58}\) For a Kharijite account of al-Ḥasan's part in pursuading the Kufans to fight them, see Sirhan b. 'Umar b. Sa'id, Kashf al-ghummah, f. 211a.
you from your enemy; and if he should defeat us, you will have been protected from us." They replied, "No, by God [not] until we fight you." Then they said, "May God have mercy on our brothers among the people [who fought at] al-Nahr. They knew you better, O people of al-Kufah." (The clan of) Ashja' took their commander, Farwah b. Nawfal—who was the chief of the folk—and they put 'Abdallāh b. Abi al-Hurr—a man of the Ṭayyi'—at their head. (The Kufans) fought them, and (the Khārijites) were killed.

When Mu'āwiya put 'Abdallāh b. 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ in charge of al-Kufah, al-Mughirah b. Shū'bah came to Mu'āwiya, saying, "You put 'Abdallāh b. 'Amr in charge of al-Kufah while 'Amr is in charge of Egypt. You are between the jawbones of the lion." So (Mu'āwiya) dismissed ('Abdallah) from al-Kufah, and put al-Mughirah in charge there. When 'Amr learned what al-Mughirah had said to Mu'āwiya, he went to Mu'āwiya and asked, "Did you put him in charge of the revenues?" (When) he replied that he had, ('Amr) said, "If you put al-Mughirah in charge of the revenues, he will seize the wealth and vanish, and you won't get anything from him. Put someone who fears and respects you in charge of the revenues." So (Mu'āwiya) dismissed al-Mughirah from (control of) the revenues and put him in charge of worship. When al-Mughirah confronted 'Amr, he asked, "Did you give the Commander of the Faithful the same advice that I gave him concerning 'Abdallah?" 'Amr replied that he had. Then al-Mughirah told him, "This for that." But from what I've heard, 'Abdallāh b. 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ never left for al-Kufah nor arrived there.

When Ḥumrān b. Abān took possession of al-Baṣrāh in this

59. Al-Nahr, "the canal," refers to Nahrawān, a town and canal with the same name east of al-Madā'in where the Khārijites were defeated by 'Ali on the ninth of Safar 38 [July 17, 658]. Their exit from al-Kufah prior to this battle is the probable origin of the Khārijite name. See EI, s.v. al-Khawāridj; Le Strange, Lands, 57–61.

60. Ḥumrān b. Abān, as a Jewish child called Tuwayd, had been taken captive by the Muslims at 'Ayn Tamr during the conquest of Iraq. He became a mawla of 'Uthmān, but was deprived of his protection when he gave a false report about the governor of al-Kufah. He had then settled at al-Baṣrāh where he was given 'Abbādān as a land grant. See Balādhurī, Futūḥ, 247, 368; Ibn Qutaybah, Mā'ārif, 435–6; Ibn Sa'd, Ṭabaqāt, VII(1), 108; and Ṭabarī, I, 2122.
year, Mu‘awiyah sent Busr to him, having ordered (Busr) to kill the sons of Ziyād.62

Mu‘awiyah’s Order to Kill the Sons of Ziyād

I was told by ‘Umar b. Shabbah—‘Ali b. Muḥammad: When al-Ḥasan b. ‘Ali made peace with Mu‘awiyah at the beginning of this year, Ḥumrān b. Abān seized al-‘Asrāḥ and took control there. Mu‘awiyah wanted to send a member of the Banū al-Qayn there, but ‘Abdallāh b. ‘Abdās persuaded him not to do so and to send someone else. So he sent Busr b. Abī Arṭāt who claimed that (Mu‘awiyah) had ordered him to kill the sons of Ziyād.

I was told by Maslamah b. Muḥārib: He seized one of Ziyād’s sons and imprisoned him. At that time Ziyād was in Fārs where ‘Ali had sent him against the Kurds who had rebelled there. Ziyād defeated them and stayed at Iṣṭakhr.66 He continued: Abū Bakrah67 asked Busr for a postponement while he rode to Mu‘awiyah, who was at al-Kūfah. So (Busr) gave him a week’s delay, going and coming. He travelled seven days and wore out two mounts beneath him, and when he spoke to Mu‘awiyah the latter wrote (to Busr) to leave (Ziyād’s sons) alone.

---

61. Busr b. Abī Arṭāt was an Arab general belonging to the Banū ‘Āmīr clan of Quraysh. He lived until the time of ‘Abd al-Malik or his son al-Walid. See EI, s.v. Busr b. Abī Arṭāt.
62. Ziyād b. Abīhi was an Arabized mawla of the Thaqif from al-Ṭā‘if. During the conquest he had migrated to al-‘Asrāḥ where he became a protegé of al-Muhārīrah b. Shū‘bah and served in the finance administration for twenty years before he became governor of Fārs for ‘Ali during the first civil war. See H. Lammens, “Ziād ibn Abīhi;” K. A. Fariq, “Ziyād ibn Abīh.”
63. The Banū al-Qayn were a branch of the Quda‘ah living in Syria. See EI, s.v. al-Kain.
64. C reads: Makhlad.
65. Fārs is a province in southwestern Iran. See Le Strange, Lands, 248–98.
66. Iṣṭakhr was a district and city, near Persepolis, in northern Fārs. The city was a Magian religious center and the capital of Fārs under the Sasanians and in the early Islamic period until the foundation of Shirāz in 646(684). See EI, s.v. Iṣṭakhr.
67. Abū Bakrah, Nufay‘b. Masruḥ(d. 51 or 52[671–72]) was a former slave of Thaqif from Ṭā‘if, and Ziyād’s half-brother on his mother’s side. See EI, s.v. Abū Bakra.
The Events of the Year 41

He continued: One of our learned people told me that Abū Bakrah approached al-Baṣrah on the seventh day, when the sun had risen. Meanwhile Busr brought out the sons of Ziyād, awaiting sunset in order to kill them if necessary. The people assembled for that, while their leaders were eagerly anticipating Abū Bakrah. Suddenly he came into view on a camel or steed (12) with he urged on, exhausted and strained. He rose upon it, dismounted, waved his cloak, and exclaimed, "God is great!." And the people said likewise. He then approached quickly on foot68 in order to reach Busr before he killed them. When he handed (Busr) Muʿāwiyah's letter, he released them.

I was told by 'Umar—'Ali b. Muḥammad: When Busr spoke on the pulpit (minbar)69 of al-Baṣrah, he reviled 'Ali. Then he said, "I implore God, that anyone who knows that I am truthful should say so, or likewise if I am a liar." When Abū Bakrah said, "By God! We know you only as a liar," (Busr) ordered him to be strangled. But Abū Luʾluʾ al-Dabbi jumped up, threw himself at (the man who was carrying out the order) and restrained him. Afterwards Abū Bakrah assigned (Abu Luʾlu') one hundred jarībs.70 Abū Bakrah was asked, "What did you wish to do?" He replied, "When he adjures us by God, should we not tell him the truth?" Busr remained in al-Baṣrah for six months; then he left. We don't know whether he put anyone in charge of his police force (shurtah).71

I was told by Aḥmad b. Zuhayr—'Ali b. Muḥammad—Sulaymān b. Bilāl—al-Jārūḍ b. Abī Sabrah: When al-Ḥasan made peace with Muʿāwiyah and left for al-Madinah, Muʿāwiyah sent Busr b. Abī Arṭat to al-Baṣrah in Rajab 41 (October 31–November 29, 661), while Ziyād was fortified in Fārs. Muʿāwiyah wrote to Ziyād, "Since you have some of God's wealth, having been put in charge of administration, bring the money you have." Ziyād wrote (back) to him, "I don't have any money left, having spent what I had properly, deposited some of it

---

68. C reads: "he rode his female camel."
69. A minbar is the pulpit in the masjid.
70. A jarīb is sixty sq. dhīrāʼah, between 1,592 and 5,837 1/3 sq. meters depending on the length of the dhīrāʼah. See W. Hinz, Islamische Masse und Gewichte, 65–6.
71. See above, n. 7.
with folk in case of misfortune, and delivered the rest to the Commander of the Faithful." Mu‘awiyyah wrote to him, "Come to me and we will examine that with which you were entrusted and that which happened under your administration. If the matter is straightened out between us, so be it, if not, you may return to your place of safety." When Ziyād [still] did not come to Mu‘awiyyah, Busr seized Ziyād’s oldest sons—‘Abd al-Raḥmān, ‘Ubaydallāh, and ‘Abbād—imprisoned them, and wrote to Ziyād, "You had better go to the Commander of the Faithful or I will surely kill your sons." Ziyād wrote [back] to him, "I’m not leaving this place where I am until God decides between me and your master. If you kill any son of mine in your possession, then the outcome is up to God, Praise Him, and we will face the reckoning ‘and those who do evil will know such a destiny that they will be utterly overthrown.’"

When Busr intended to kill them, Abū Bakrah came to him saying, "You seized my sons and nephews as innocent youths although al-Ḥasan had made peace with Mu‘awiyyah on condition of a guarantee of safe-conduct for ‘Ali’s companions, wherever they might be. So you don’t have any way to get at them or their father." Busr said, "Your brother has wealth which he took, and he refused to deliver it." Abū Bakrah replied, "He doesn’t have anything, so leave my nephews alone until I bring you a letter from Mu‘awiyyah [telling you] to release them." Busr granted him a few days’ delay, saying, "I shall kill them unless you bring me Mu‘awiyyah’s letter to release them, or Ziyād goes to the Commander of the Faithful." When Abū Bakrah came to Mu‘awiyyah, he interceded with him for Ziyād and his sons. Mu‘awiyyah wrote to Busr to leave them alone and let them go, so he did.

I was told by Ahmad b. ‘Ali—a shaykh of Thaqīf—Busr b. ‘Ubaydallāh: When Abū Bakrah went to Mu‘awiyyah at al-Kūfah, Mu‘awiyyah asked him, "O Abū Bakrah, have you come to visit or because you need something?" He replied, "To tell you the truth, I only came out of necessity." Mu‘awiyyah said, "Intercede, O Abū Bakrah, and we will consider favoring

---

72. Qur‘ān 26: 228.
you with regard to [your request] since you deserve that. What is it?" He answered, "Give my brother, Ziyād, a guarantee of safe-conduct and write to Busr to release his children and to stop bothering them" Muʿawiyah replied, "As far as the sons of Ziyād are concerned, we shall write for you what you have asked on their behalf. As far as Ziyād is concerned, he has wealth belonging to the Muslims. When he pays it, we will have no way to get at him." Abū Bakrah said, "O Commander of the Faithful, if he had anything, he would not withhold it from you, God willing." So Muʿawiyah wrote on Abū Bakrah's behalf to Busr telling him not to interfere with any of Ziyād's children.

Muʿawiyah then said to Abū Bakrah "Will you make a pact with us, O Abū Bakrah?" The latter replied, "Yes, I entrust you, O Commander of the Faithful, to watch over yourself and your flock and to act virtuously. For you have taken a great thing upon yourself—the Caliphate of God over His creation. So fear God, for you have a goal which you will not avoid, while behind you there is a slow but persistent Pursuer." You are about to reach the destination. The Pursuer will overtake you, and you will come to One who will ask you about what you were doing, while He knows more about it than you. Instead it will be an accounting and an apprehension. You will certainly not prefer anything over the satisfaction of God, Almighty and Great."

I was told by Aḥmad—ʿAli—Salamah b. ʿUthmān: Busr wrote to Ziyād, "If you don't present yourself, I shall surely crucify your sons." Ziyād wrote back to him, "If you do, that would be worthy of you, because the son of the eater of livers sent you." Abū Bakrah then rode to Muʿawiyah and said, "O Muʿawiyah, the people did not give you their allegiance for the killing of children." He asked, "How's that, O Abū Bakrah?" The latter replied, "Busr intends to kill the children of Ziyād." Muʿawiyah then wrote to Busr, "Release any children of Ziyād you have."

Muʿawiyah had written to Ziyād after ʿAli's assassination,

---

74. Qurʾān 7: 72.
75. That is, Muʿawiyah, whose mother, Hind, had eaten the liver of Muḥammad's uncle, Ḥamzah, in revenge at the Battle of ʿUḥud.
threatening him. I was told by 'Umar b. Shabbah—'Ali—‘Abbās b. Šabbāh—al-Muṣā—al-Muṣālīd—al-Sha‘bī. When 'Ali was killed, Mu‘āwiya wrote to Ziyād threatening him. So he got up to speak, saying, “How amazing is the son of the eater of livers, cavern of hypocrisy, and head of the factions. He wrote to me threatening me, while there are two nephews of the Messenger of God—that is, Ibn 'Abbās and al-Ḥasan b. 'Ali—between me and him. They have ninety thousand men who put their swords on their shoulders, unbending. If I were free of this business, he would feel the most biting of heavy sword blows.” Ziyād remained as governor of Fārs until al-Ḥasan made peace with Mu‘āwiya, and Mu‘āwiya had arrived at al-Kūfah. Ziyād fortified himself in a stronghold which is called the Fortress of Ziyād.

In this year Mu‘āwiya put 'Abdallāh b. 'Amir in charge of al-ṣṭrāḥ and of military matters in Sijistān” and Khurāsān.”

‘Abdallāh b. ‘Āmir Put in Charge of al-Baṣrah

I was told by Abū Zayd—‘Ali: When Mu‘āwiya intended to send 'Utbah b. Abī Sufyān to be in charge of al-Baṣrah, Ibn ‘Āmir spoke with Mu‘āwiya, saying, “I have wealth and deposits there, and if you don’t put me in charge of it, I shall leave.” Mu‘āwiya then put him in charge of al-Baṣrah, Khurāsān, and Sijistān. He wanted to put Zayd b. Jabiḥ al-Dabbi in charge of his police force, but the latter refused. So he put Ḥabīb b. Shiḥāb al-Sha‘mī in charge of his police—according to another report it was Qays b. al-Haytham al-Sulami. He also appointed ‘Amrāh b. Yathribi al-Dabbi, the brother of 'Amr b. Yathribi al-Dabbi, as judge (qādi).
The Events of the Year 41

I was told by Abū Zayd—'Alī b. Muḥammad: When Ibn 'Āmir was governor for Mu‘āwiyah, Yazid b. Mālik al-Bāhili, The Broken-nosed, rebelled. He was called The Broken-nosed because of a blow which he had received on his face. When he rebelled with Sahm b. Ghalib al-Hujaymi and went to Jisr81 in the morning, they met 'Ibadah b. Qurt al-Laythi82 worshipping there. He belonged to the Banū Bujayr, and had been a Companion (of Muḥammad). They rebuked him, killed him,83 and then asked for a guarantee of safe-conduct afterwards. Ibn 'Āmir guaranteed their safety and wrote to Mu‘āwiyah, “I gave them your guarantee of protection.” Mu‘āwiyah wrote back to him, “You may violate that guarantee of protection, (since) you weren’t asked for it.” They thus remained in guaranteed security until Ibn 'Āmir was dismissed.84

In this year ‘Ali b. 'Abdallāh b. ‘Abbās85 was born. According to another report he was born in the year 40 (660/661) before ‘Ali was killed, and this is what al-Wāqidi says.

‘Utbah b. Abī Sufyān led the people in the pilgrimage in this year according to Abū Ma’shar.86 I was told that by Abū Ma’shar Thābit—whoever told him—Ishāq b. ‘Isā. As for al-Wāqidi, Ahmād reported according to his informant that he used to say: ‘Anbasah b. Abī Sufyān led the people in the pilgrimage this year.

81. That is, “the bridge.” According to Ibn Khayyāt, Ta’rikh, I, 235, this was the subdistrict (nahiyah) called Jisr al-Baṣrah.
83. According to Ibn al-Athīr, Usd, III, 107, ‘Ibadah was killed in al-Ahwāz. Ibn Khayyāt, Ta’rikh, I, 235, reports that Sahm also killed Sa’d, a mawla of Qudāmah b. Maz‘ūn, and that Ibn ‘Āmir killed several of their comrades but granted them both safe-conducts.
84. They were killed after Ziyād became governor of al-Baṣrah in 45(665). See Ibn al-Athīr, Usd, III, 108.
86. Abū Ma’shar, Najīb b. ‘Abd al-Rahmān [d. 170(787)] was a former slave from Yaman who lived in al-Madinah until 160(776/7) when he moved to Baghdad. His book on early Muslim campaigns was based on Madinan authorities. See EI, s.v. Abū Ma’shar.
The
Events of the Year

42
(APRIL 26, 662–APRIL 14, 663)

During this year the Muslims raided the Alans. They also raided the Byzantines and inflicted a shocking defeat on them, reportedly killing several generals (batāriqah).

It was said that al-Hajjāj b. Yūsuf was born in this year.

In this year Mu'āwiyah made Marwān b. al-Ḥakam governor of al-Madinah, and Marwān appointed 'Abdallāh b. al-Ḥārith b. Nawfāl as judge. Khālid b. al-ʿĀṣ b. Hishām was (the governor) in charge of Mecca; al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah was in charge of al-Kūfah on his behalf, while Shurayh super-

87. The Alans were an Iranian people living north of the Caucasus, the ancestors of the modern Ossets. See El², s.v. Alān.
88. Batriq (pl. batāriqah) in Arabic comes from the Latin patricius via the Greek patrikios. In Arabic usage a batriq meant to the Byzantines what a qa'id (general, leader) meant to the Arabs.
89. Al-Hajjāj b. Yūsuf (42–95[662–714]) was a member of the Thaqīf from al-Tā'if and governor of Iraq and the East, 75–95[694–714]. According to Ibn Khayyāṭ, Ta'rikh, I, 236, al-Hajjāj was born in 41[661/2] See El², s.v. al-Hadjdāji.
90. Marwān b. al-Ḥakam [d. 65[685]] was Mu'āwiyah's cousin and founded the Marwānīd dynasty of caliphs. See El², s.v. Marwān b. al-Ḥakam.
91. Most probably Mu'āwiyah is meant here.
92. Shurayh b. al-Ḥārith al-Kindi [d. bet. 78[697] and 80[699]]. He had been
The Events of the Year 42

vised rendering judgment there. 'Abdallāh b. ʿĀmir was in charge of al- Bsrah, while ʿAmr b. Yathribi was in charge of rendering judgment, and Qays b. al-Haytham was in charge of Khurasan on behalf of 'Abdallāh b. ʿĀmir.

(According to) 'Ali b. Muhammad—Muḥammad b. al-Faḍl al-'Absi—his father: 'Abdallāh b. ʿĀmir sent Qays b. al-Haytham to be in charge of Khurasan when Muʿawiyyah appointed the former to be governor of al- Bsrah and Khurasan. Qays remained in Khurasan for two years. Another report about the governorship of Qays is that of Ḥamzah b. Ṣāliḥ al-Sulami—Ziyād b. Ṣāliḥ: When his affairs were settled, Muʿawiyyah sent Qays b. al-Haytham to Khurasan. He then added Khurasan to (the territory under) Ibn ʿĀmir, who left Qays in charge of it.

During this year the Khārijites who had separated from those Khārijites who were (later) killed at al-Nahrawān were stirred into action, along with those who had been carried, wounded, from the battlefield at al-Nahrawān. Having recovered from their wounds the latter had been forgiven by 'Alī b. Abī Ṭālib.

What Happened to the Khārijites

(According to) Hishām b. Muḥammad—Abū Mikhnaf—al-Naḍr b. Ṣāliḥ b. Ḥabib—Jarir b. Mālik b. Zuhayr b. Jadhimah al-'Absi—Ubayy b. ʿUmārah al-'Absi: Ḥayyān b. Zabyān al-Sulami held the view of the Khārijites and was among the wounded who were carried from the battlefield at al-Nahrawān. 'Alī included him among the four hundred of those who were wounded at the Battle of al-Nahr whom he forgave. Ḥayyān stayed with his family and clan, waiting for about a

sent to Iraq by the caliph 'Umar as judge in 19(640). See Ibn Sa'd, Ṭabaqāt, VI, 90–100.

94. Hishām b. Muḥammad b. al-Ṣā'īb, Abū al-Mundhir, al-Kalbi (120–204 [737–819] or 206[821]) was a Shi’ite native of al-Kūfah. credited with over one hundred fifty works on all subjects. See EI', s.v. al-Kalbi.
96. Ṣīrājī consistently has Ṭaybān.
month or so. Then he left for al-Rayy with men who held Khārijite views. They stayed at al-Rayy until they heard about 'Ali's assassination. At that, Ḥayyān summoned his companions—they were about ten men, one of whom was Sālim b. Rabī'ah al-'Absi—and they came to him.

After Ḥayyān praised and extolled God, he said, "O Brothers of the Muslims. I have heard that your brother, Ibn Muljam, brother of the Murād, lay in wait to kill 'Ali b. Abī Ṭālib in the pre-dawn darkness opposite the door of the congregational mosque [masjid]. He remained motionless, waiting for 'Ali to come out, until he did come out when it was time for the dawn worship. [Then] he attacked 'Ali and struck his head with his sword. 'Ali only lasted two nights until he died." Sālim b. Rabī'ah al-'Absi exclaimed, "May God not cut off the right hand of whoever struck his skull with the sword!" The folk began to praise God for 'Ali's death, may peace be upon him and may God be satisfied with him and not be satisfied with them.

Al-Nadr b. Ṣāliḥ [said]: Afterwards, during the governorship (imārah) of Mus'ab b. al-Zubayr, I asked Sālim b. Rabī'ah about what he had said with regard to 'Ali. He confirmed it for me, saying, "I held their view for a while, but I have since abandoned it." We agreed that he had abandoned it. Whenever that was mentioned to him, he was consumed (with regret).

Then Ḥayyān b. Ṣabyān said to his companions:

By God, no one lives forever. Nights and days and years and months will not continue indefinitely for a son of Adam until he tastes death and will part from the virtuous brothers and leave the world over which only weaklings weep, a world which is always harmful for whoever has concern and worry. Then let us be off, may God have mercy upon you, to our city [miṣr]. Let us join our brothers and summon them to commanding good and forbid-
The Events of the Year 42

[19]
ding evil and to striving [jihād] against the factions. For
we have no excuse for being inactive while our rulers are
oppressive, and while guiding precedent [sunnah] is aban-
doned and our vengeance remains unexacted against those
who killed our brothers in the assemblies. If God gives us
victory over them, let us turn afterwards to that which is
more correct and satisfying and upright. God will thereby
heal the hearts of believers. If we are killed, we would have
repose in parting from the oppressors, while our forefa-
thers have set an example for us.

So they said to him, "We all say the same, and praise the view
that you expressed. Then lead us to the city, for we are satisfied
with your guidance and your command."

Hayyān left and they left with him, proceeding to al-Kūfah.
That was when he said:

My friend, I have neither solace nor composure,
not skill after the victims at al-Nahr,
Only camels rising with numerous squadrons.
You will call upon God and in Him you will prevail.
My mule has left Qustānat al-Rayy behind;
I shall never approach it again.
But I am leaving soon, even if my supporters are few,
so I would not shame you two, with whom he goes.

Hayyān proceeded until he settled at al-Kūfah where he re-
mained until Mu'āwiyyah came to power and sent al-Mughirah
b. Shu‘bāh to be governor there. Al-Mughirah liked things to

---

101. Qur'ān 3:104, 110. The Khārijites were among the first Muslims to em-
phasize this responsibility.
102. See above, n. 57.
103. That is, the assemblies [al-majālīs] of the Khārijites.
104. These lines are ascribed to Sālim b. Rabī'ah al-‘Abdī in Baladhuri, An-
sāb, IV A, 143.
105. The text reads: muṣābin, "the victims"; O reads: muṣallin, "wor-
shippers."
106. The text reads: nahadāt, "camels rising"; C reads: nahaghāt, "scouting
parties."
107. Qustanāh or Qistānah was a village one day's journey from al-Rayy on
the road to Sāwah. See Yaqūt, Mu'jam, IV, 94–5.
108. O reads: "spur on you two."
run smoothly; he behaved well with people and did not ask sectarians about their sects. People would be brought to him, and he would be told that so-and-so holds Shi'ite views, and so-and-so holds Kharijite views. But he would say, "God has decided that you will continue to disagree. And God will judge between His creatures concerning that in which they disagree." So people felt safe with him.

The Kharijites would meet each other, and recalling the circumstances of their brethren at al-Nahrawān, they would consider deceit and ruin to lie in staying, while merit and reward lay in striving (jihād) against the people of the qiblah. (According to) Abu Mikhnaf-al-Nadr b. Šalih—Ubayy b. 'Umārah: In the days of al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah the Kharijites turned to three persons, one of whom was al-Mustawrid b. 'Ullifah. The latter rebelled with three hundred men and headed toward Jarjarāyā on the banks of the Tigris. (According to) Abu Mikhnaf—Ja'far b. Iiudhayfah of the family of 'Āmir b. Juwayn—al-Muḥill b. Khalīfah: In the days of al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah the Kharijites turned to three persons: al-Mustawrid b. 'Ullifah al-Taymi of Taym al-Ribāb, Hayyan b. Zabyān al-Sulami, and Mu'ādh b. Juwayn b. Ḥuṣayn al-Tā'ī al-Sinbisi, who was the nephew of Zayd b. Ḥuṣayn. Zayd was one of those whom 'Ali killed at the Battle of al-Nahrawān. This Mu'ādh b. Juwayn was among the four hundred wounded who were carried off the battlefield and pardoned by 'Alī.

The Kharijites assembled at the dwelling of Hayyan b. Zabyān al-Sulami and deliberated about whom they should appoint to be in charge. Al-Mustawrid addressed them, "O Muslims and believers, may God give you what you desire and remove from you what you hate. Appoint whomever you like over you. By Him who knows the secret in one's eyes and what

---

109. See Qur'ān 42:10. Deferring to God's judgment in order to avoid conflict in this way amounts to the position later identified as Murji'ite. See W. Montgomery Watt, The Formative Period of Islamic Thought, 119–28.
110. The qiblah is the direction of the Ka'bah in Mecca toward which Muslim's face when they worship. The Kharijites called nominal Muslims "people of the qiblah."
111. Jarjarāyā was a town near the place where the Nahrawān Canal emptied into the Tigris River. See Le Strange, Lands, 37.
is hidden in one’s heart, I don’t care which of you would govern me. We do not seek the glory of this world, and there is no way to remain in it. We desire only immortality in the abode of immortality.” At that, Ḥayyān b. Zabyān said, “As for me, I have no need to rule, and I am satisfied with every one of my brethren. Look, then, upon whomever of you that you wish and name him. I shall be the first to render allegiance.” Mu‘ādh b. Juwayn b. Huṣayn then spoke to them, “Since you both say you are thus [content to follow another] while you are both leaders of the Muslims and possessors of their lineages as regards virtue, religion, and standing, who shall lead the Muslims? For they are not all virtuous enough for that command. However, when Muslims are equal in virtue, the most perspicacious of them in war, the most learned of them in religion, and the most capable of them in carrying out strongly that which is imposed must take charge. Both of you, God be praised, are among those who are satisfactory for this command. Let one of you two take charge.” They both replied, “You be in charge for we have been satisfied with you, for you, praise God, are perfect in your religion and your views.” He then responded to both of them, “You are both older than I, let one of you two take charge.”

At that moment, a group of the Khārijites who were present said, “We are satisfied with the three of you. Put in charge whomever of you that you prefer.” At that, each of the three men said to his companion, “You be in charge, for I am satisfied with you and I have no desire for rule.” After that had continued among [the three of] them for a long time, Ḥayyān b. Zabyān declared, “Since Mu‘ādh b. Juwayn said, ‘Don’t put me in charge of both of you since you are both older than I,’ I say the same to you that he said to us. Hold out your hand that I may render allegiance to you.” So al-Mustawrid held out his hand and Ḥayyān rendered allegiance to him, followed by Mu‘ādh b. Juwayn and then by the entire group. That was in Jumāda II (August 22—September 20, 662). The folk agreed to equip and prepare themselves, and to be ready. They were to

112. The text reads: nurīdu; O reads: yazīdu, that is, “the glory of this world does not increase.”
Between Civil Wars: The Caliphate of Mu‘āwiya

rebel at the beginning of the new moon, that is, the new moon of Sha‘bān 43 [November 8, 663]. So they were equipped and ready.

[22] It was said that in this year Busr b. Abī Arṭāt al-‘Āmirī set out for al-Madīnah, Mecca, and al-Yaman. He killed various Muslims during that journey, according to al-Wāqidi. I have previously mentioned those who differ with him about the time Busr made that journey. Al-Wāqidi claimed that he was told by Dāwūd b. Ḥayyān—‘Aṭā’ b. Abī Marwān: Busr b. Abī Arṭāt stayed at al-Madīnah for a month investigating the people. He killed everyone who was said to have helped against ‘Uthmān. [According to] ‘Aṭā’ b. Abī Marwān—Ḥanẓalah b. ‘Ali al-Aslami: Busr found some of the Banū Ka‘b and their youths at one of their wells, so he threw them in it.

In this year Ziyād came to Mu‘āwiya. This is according to what I was told by ‘Umar—Abū al-Ḥasan—Sulaymān b. Abī Arqam: Ziyād came to Mu‘āwiya from Fārs and reached a settlement with him in return for the wealth which he brought to Mu‘āwiya. The reason why he came after having refused at one of the strongholds of Fārs is (in) the following account that I was told by ‘Umar—Abū al-Ḥasan—Maslamah b. Muhārib: ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī Bakrah used to be in charge of Ziyād’s property in al-Baṣrah. Mu‘āwiya learned that Ziyād had wealth with ‘Abd al-Rahmān. When Ziyād feared for things which ‘Abd al-Rahmān held for him, he wrote to ‘Abd al-Rahmān ordering him to safeguard his property. When Mu‘āwiya sent to al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bāh to investigate Ziyād’s wealth, al-Mughirah came and took ‘Abd al-Rahmān aside saying, “Your father may have done me wrong, but Ziyād treated me well.” He then wrote to Mu‘āwiya, “I didn’t find anything in ‘Abd al-Rahmān’s possession which I am free to take.” Mu‘āwiya wrote back to al-Mughirah to torture him. Some authorities reported that al-Mughirah tortured ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī Bakrah when Mu‘āwiya wrote to him, although he wanted to be excused. When Mu‘āwiya learned of this, he said, “Perse-
vere in what your kinsman ordered you to do." So al-Mughirah covered 'Abd al-Rahmān's face with silk, and moistened it with water so that it would stick, and the latter fainted. Al-Mughirah did that three times, released him, and wrote back to Mu'āwiyyah, "I tortured him but did not get anything from him." Thus he earned Ziyād's gratitude.

I was told by 'Umar—Abū al-Hasan—'Abd al-Malik b. 'Abdallāh al-Thaqafi—shaykhs of the Thaqif: Al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah entered Mu'āwiyyah's presence, and upon seeing him Mu'āwiyyah said:

The place of a man's secret, if
he reveals the secret, is his sincere brother.
So if you reveal a secret, let it be to
someone sincere who will keep it secret, or don't disclose it.

Al-Mughirah replied, "O Commander of the Faithful, if you should place your trust in me, you would do so with someone who is sincere, sympathetic, Godfearing, and dependable. What is it, O Commander of the Faithful?" Mu'āwiyyah replied, "I remembered Ziyād clinging to the land of Fārs and his defiance there, and I didn't sleep last night." Al-Mughirah wanted to downplay Ziyād, so he asked, "What is Ziyād over there, O Commander of the Faithful?" Mu'āwiyyah replied, "What a miserable, low, incompetent, trickster of an Arab. He holds wealth fortified in a fortress of Fārs. He contrives subterfuges and lies in wait. I am not reassured that he won't acknowledge a man belonging to the people of this house."

If so he will have renewed the war against me deceitfully." Al-Mughirah then asked, "Do you give me permission to go to him, O Commander of the Faithful?" He answered, "Yes. Go to him and be polite."

Al-Mughirah then came to Ziyād, and when he learned about al-Mughirah's approach, Ziyād remarked, "He only came on an important mission." Then he admitted al-Mughirah, who entered his presence, while Ziyād was in his reception hall facing

---

115. The text reads: ahl ḥādhā al-bayt, that is, a member of Muḥammad's family, in particular a relative of 'Ali. See EF, s. v. Aḥl al-Bayt.
the sun. Ziyād greeted him saying, "May the visitor prosper." To which al-Mughirah replied, "The news ends with you, Abū Mughirah."

16 Muʿāwiya was so carried away with fear that he sent me to you. He didn't know anyone who attempted this matter except al-Hasan. Since the latter has already rendered allegiance to Muʿāwiya, take [something] for yourself before settling down [somewhere]. Muʿāwiya has no need of you."

Ziyād responded, "Confidentially, give me the best practical advice you can." Al-Mughirah answered, "A frank opinion might be distasteful but there is no use watering it down. I think you should attach your rope to Muʿāwiya's and travel to him." Ziyād replied, "I will see, and God will decide."

I was told by 'Umar—'Ali—Maslamah b. Muhārib: When Ziyād had remained in the fortress for over a year, Muʿāwiya wrote to him, "Why do you destroy yourself? Come to me and tell me how much wealth you collected as taxes, what you spent, and what remained with you; you will be guaranteed a safe-conduct. If you would like to remain with us, then do so, and if you prefer to return to your place of safety, then return."

At that, Ziyād left Fārs. When al-Mughirah b. Shuʿbah learned that Ziyād had decided to come to Muʿāwiya, he set out for Muʿāwiya before Ziyād set out from Fārs. Ziyād set out from Īstakhr to Arrajān and came to Mah Bahradhan. Then he took the Hulwān Road until he reached al-Madā'in. 'Abd al-Rahmān then left for Muʿāwiya, to inform him of Ziyād's coming. Then, when Ziyād had reached Syria, and al-Mughirah arrived a month later, Muʿāwiya said to the latter, "O Mughirah, Ziyād's journey was a month longer than yours and you left before he did, and yet he arrived before you." Al-Mughirah replied, "O Commander of the Faithful, if one clever person..."
speaks with another, his argument will silence him.” Mu‘āwiyah responded, “Watch out! Keep your secret from me.” So al-Mughirah said, “Ziyād came hoping for gain [ziyādah], while I came fearing loss, so that explains how we traveled.”

Mu‘āwiyah questioned Ziyād about the wealth of Fārs that he had collected. So Ziyād told him how much he had sent to ‘Ali and how much he had spent properly on necessary expenses. Mu‘āwiyah believed him concerning what he had spent and what he had left, and he collected the remainder from Ziyād, saying, “You have been the most reliable of our deputies [khulafā’].”

I was told by ‘Umar—‘Ali—‘Abū Mikhnaf, Abū ‘Abd al-Raḥmān al-Īṣṭahānī, Salamah b. ‘Uthmān, a shaykh of the Banū Tamim, and others who may be trusted: When Mu‘āwiyah wrote to Ziyād while the latter was in Fārs asking him to come to him, Ziyād set out from Fārs with al-Minjab b. Rashīd al-Dabbi and Ḥārith b. Badr al-Ghadānī. Mu‘āwiyah also dispatched Abdallah b. Khāzim to Fārs with a contingent, saying, “Should you meet Ziyād en route, seize him.” Ibn Khāzim journeyed to Fārs—some said that he met Ziyād at Sūq al-Ahwāz; others (said that) he met him at Arrajān. When they met, Ibn Khāzim seized the reins of Ziyād’s horse demanding, “Dismount, 0 Ziyād!” At that, al-Minjab b. Rashīd shouted to him, “Let go, 0 son of a black, or I shall tie your hand in the reins!” It is also said that Ibn Khāzim caught up with them while Ziyād was sitting and spoke to him rudely, whereupon al-Minjab reviled Ibn Khāzim. Ziyād then asked him, “What do you want, 0 Ibn Khāzim?” He answered, “I want you to come to al-Baṣrāh.” When Ziyād replied, “Indeed, I am going there,” Ibn Khāzim went off embarrassed by him.

[According to] some authorities: Ziyād and Ibn Khāzim met at Arrajān and quarreled. Ziyād told Ibn Khāzim, “I have received Mu‘āwiyah’s safe-conduct, so I intend to go to him. This is his letter to me.” Ibn Khāzim replied, “If you intend to go to the Commander of the Faithful, there is no way to get at you.”

123. C reads: Zayd.
124. Sūq al-Ahwāz was a city in Khuzistān. See Le Strange, Lands, 332–34.
Ibn Khāzīm then departed for Sābūr, while Ziyād left for Māh Bahrādhan, and came to Muʿāwiyah who asked him about the wealth of Fārs. Ziyād answered, “I spent it, O Commander of the Faithful, on provisions, stipends, and campaigns. I deposited the remainder with folk for safekeeping.”

Ziyād thus kept putting off Muʿāwiyah while he wrote letters to folk, among whom was Shuʿbah b. al-Qilʿim, “You know how I trust you, so consider the verse of the Book of God, Almighty and Great, ‘We offered the trust to the heavens and the earth and the mountains . . .’ Take care of what you can.” He also designated in the letters the amount which he had confirmed for Muʿāwiyah, and he concealed the letters with his messenger, ordering him to pass by some [people] who would inform Muʿāwiyah. So his messenger did that until [word of] it spread and he was seized and brought to Muʿāwiyah. Muʿāwiyah then told Ziyād, “If you are not going to deceive me, I need these letters.” So Muʿāwiyah read them, and [the amount] was indeed the same as Ziyād had confirmed for him. Muʿāwiyah said, “I fear that you may have [already] deceived me. Make peace with me in return for whatever you wish.” At that, Ziyād made peace with him for part of what he told Muʿāwiyah he had, and delivered it. Ziyād then said, “O Commander of the Faithful, I had wealth before becoming governor. I would like to keep that wealth and to give up what I acquired as governor.”

Then Ziyād asked Muʿāwiyah’s permission to settle at al-Kūfah. When he gave it, Ziyād proceeded to al-Kūfah. Al-Mughirah would honor and praise Ziyād, and Muʿāwiyah wrote to al-Muḥirah, “Urge Ziyād, Sulaymān b. Šurad, Hujr b. ‘Adī”.

---

126. Sābūr was the city of Bishāpūr in Fārs. See Le Strange, Lands, 262–63.
127. Qurʾān 33:72.
128. C adds: “So he settled in it after he gave permission.”
129. Sulaymān b. Šurad al-Khuzaʿi [d. 651/685] had settled in al-Kūfah with his tribe. He had been among those who protested the land policy of Saʿīd b. al-ʿĀs, there. He fought on ‘Alī’s side at the Battle of Siffin, but had objected to the arbitration agreement. See Dinawari, Akhbār, 182, 198, 210; EL, s.v. Sulaymān b. Šurad al-Khuzaʿi; S. H. M. Jafri, Shiʿa Islam, 82.
130. Hujr b. ‘Adī al-Kindī [d. 50/760] had commanded the Muslim right wing at Jalūlā. He was among those who protested the land policy of Saʿīd b. al-ʿĀs, and had persuaded the Kūfans to join ‘Alī before the Battle of the Camel. He
Shabath b. Rib‘i,131 Ibn al-Kawwā₁,132 and ‘Amr b. al-Ḥamiq₁³³ to worship with the assembly.” Consequently they would be present with him at worship.₁₃₄

I was told by ‘Umar b. Shabbah—‘Ali—Sulaymān b. Arqam:₁³⁵ I learned that Ziyād arrived at al-Kūfah, and, when it was time for worship, al-Mughirah said to him, “Come forward and lead the worship.” Ziyād replied, “I won’t. You have more right than I to lead worship during your regime [sultānikum].” Ziyād also entered al-Mughirah’s presence while Umm Ayyūb bt. ‘Umārah b. Uqbah was with him. Al-Mughirah seated her in front of Ziyād, saying, “You will not be concealed from Abū al-Mughirah.” When al-Mughirah died, Ziyād married her, while she was [still] young. Ziyād would order that an elephant of his be made to stand and Umm Ayyūb would look at it. As a result [that place] was called Bāb al-Fil.₁³₆

‘Anbasah b. Abī Sufyān led the people in the pilgrimage this year. I was told this by Ahmad b. Thabit—someone—Ishaq b. ‘Isā—Abū Ma‘shar.

was wounded at Siffin, witnessed the arbitration agreement, commanded ‘Ali’s right wing at al-Nahrawān, and was a potential rival of the family of al-Ash‘ath b. Qays for the leadership of the Kindah at al-Kūfah. See Dinawārī, Akhbar, 135, 154, 176, 187, 209, 223, 238; EI, s.v. Hudjr b. ‘Adī al-Kindī; Jafri, Shi‘a Islam, 82. For his disruption of worship see below.

131. Shabath b. Rib‘i al-Tamīmī, who had followed the false prophetess Sajāh as a youth, fought on ‘Ali’s side at Siffin, was put in charge of fighting by the Ḥarūriyyah, but commanded ‘Ali’s left wing at al-Nahrawān. He became the chief of the Banū Ḥanzalah at al-Kūfah. See Dinawārī, Akhbar, 223, 243; Ṭabarī, I, 1919, 3270, 3349, 3380, 3388.

132. ‘Abdallāh b. al-Kawwā₁ al-Yashkūrī had favored judgment according to the Qur‘ān at Siffin. He was put in charge of worship by the Ḥarūriyyah, and was one of the Kharijī leaders who fought at al-Nahrawān. See Dinawārī, Akhbar, 176, 209; Ṭabarī, I, 2921.

133. C reads: ‘Umar b. al-Ḥamiq. ‘Amr b. al-Ḥamiq al-Khuza‘i was one of the notables who had opposed ‘Uthmān in ᵃ₁� 653/4 and had helped to kill ‘Uthmān. He fought on ‘Ali’s side at Siffin, and witnessed the arbitration agreement. See Dinawārī, Akhbar, 176, 209; and Ṭabarī, I, 2921.

134. The point is that all of those whose loyalty was suspect were required to attend public worship led by the governor as a sign that they accepted the current regime.


136. That is, “the Gate of the Elephant.” See also Baladhuri, Futūḥ, 288.
The Events of the Year

43

(April 15, 663–April 3, 664)

Among these events was Busr b. Abi Arṭāt's campaign against the Byzantines. Al-Wāqidi claimed that Busr spent the winter in their territory until he reached Constantinople. But some experts in historical matters have denied that, saying that Busr never spent the winter in Byzantine territory.

In this year 'Amr b. al-'Āş died in Egypt on Yawm al-Fiṭr. He had been its governor for 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb for four years, and for 'Uthmān for four years minus two months, and for Muʿāwiya for two years minus one month.

In this year Muʿāwiya appointed 'Abdallāh b. 'Amr b. al-'Āş governor of Egypt after the death of his father. Al-Wāqidi claimed that he was its governor for about two years.

In Safar of this year (May 15–June 12, 663) Muḥammad b. Maslamah died in al-Madīnah. Marwān b. al-Ḥakām led the prayers over him.

138. Yawm al-Fiṭr is the day celebrating the end of the month-long fast of Ramadān.
139. Muḥammad b. Maslamah b. Khālid b. 'Adī was an early Muslim convert.
The Events of the Year 43

In this year al-Mustawrid b. 'Ullifah, the Kharijite, was killed, as Hishâm b. Muḥammad claimed. Others have claimed that he was killed in the previous year.

The Killing of al-Mustawrid b. 'Ullifah

We have already reported the meeting of the remaining Kharijites who were carried off wounded at the Battle of al-Nahr, those who withdrew to al-Rayy and others. They met with the three persons whom I named previously, one of whom was al-Mustawrid b. 'Ullifah. We reported how they rendered allegiance to him and gathered for revolt at the beginning of the new moon of Sha'ban 43 (November 8, 663).

[According to] Hishâm—Ja'far b. Hudhayfah al-Ṭâ'i—al-Muhill b. Khalifah: Qabisah b. al-Dammûn, who was in charge of the police came to al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah, saying, "Shimr b. Ja'wanah al-Kilâbî came and informed me that the Kharijites have gathered at the house of Ḥayyân b. Ṣabyân al-Sulami, and have agreed among themselves to rebel against you at the beginning of Sha'ban (November 8, 663)." Al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah then told Qabisah b. al-Dammûn, who was an ally of the Thaqîf (they claimed that he came from al-Ṣadîf in Ḥadramawt), "Take the police to surround the house of Ḥayyân b. Ṣabyân, and bring him to me." They were convinced that he was the commander of those Kharijites. Qabisah took the police and many other people, and, before Ḥayyân b. Ṣabyân realized it, they were at his house at noon. Mu'âdh b. Juwayn and about twenty of their companions were with Ḥayyân at that time. Ḥayyân's wife, an umm walad of his, who had fought at the Battle of Badr. He helped to kill Ka'b b. al-'Ashraf; killed the Jew, Marhâb, after the conquest of Khaybar; and had been put in charge of al-Madinah when Muḥammad went to Tabûk. See Ibn Hishâm, Siṭrâh, I, 492, 550—51, 761, 896.

140. This account is summarized by Baladhuri, Ansâb, IV A, 143—47.
141. O begins: "Abû Ja'far, may God have mercy on him, said."
142. O and Cairo read: Qubaysâh.
143. O reads: al-Dammûr; C reads: al-Zanbûr.
144. O adds: šakkahu 'ammi "my uncle locked it."
145. C reads: "and an umm walad of his." An umm walad was a slave woman who had borne a child to her master. Such a woman was normally freed and her child recognized as legitimate after their master died.
jumped up, and took their swords which she threw under the bedding. Some of the folk sought to defend themselves with their swords, but, when they did not find them, they surrendered. Qabiṣah took them away to al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah who asked them, "What prompted you to want to split the stick of the Muslims?" They replied, "We didn't want anything of the sort," to which he responded, "Yes indeed! I heard that about you, and then your gathering confirmed it for me." They answered, "As far as our gathering in that house is concerned, Ḥayyān b. Zabyān taught us to recite the Qur'ān, so we meet with him in his house in order to recite it to him." Al-Mughirah ordered, "Take them to the prison." They remained there for about a year.

When their brethren heard about their arrest, they were (more) cautious. Al-Mustawrid b. 'Ullifah, their leader (ṣāhib), left (al-Kufah) and settled at a house in al-Ḥirah next to the Qaṣr al-'Adasiyyin of the Kalb. He sent to his brethren, who would visit him frequently, and equip themselves. When their frequent visits increased, their leader, al-Mustawrid b. 'Ullifah al-Taymi, said to them, "Let us leave this place, for I fear that you will be discovered." Some of them said to each other, "Let us go to this place;" others said, "that place."

Ḥajjār b. Abjar looked down upon them from a house in which he and a group of his family were staying. Suddenly they would see two horsemen arrive and enter that house in which the folk were (gathered). Then, before long, two others would come and enter, and shortly afterwards another would come and enter, then still another who would enter. That would concern him. They would also leave close together. So Ḥajjār said to the lady of the house in which he was staying, while she was 146. O reads: jaddadū, "they started over."
147. The Qaṣr al-Adasiyyin was one of the fortified enclosures at the town of al-Ḥirah, about six km from al-Kufah. It belonged to the Banū 'Ammār b. 'Abd al-Masih, and was named after their ancestress, 'Adasah bt. Mālik b. 'Awf al-Kalbi. See Baladhuri, Futūḥ, 244; Ibn al-Faqih, Buldān, 183; and Yāqūt, Mu'jam, IV, 116.
148. C reads: yajtahidū, "exerted."
149. C reads: "to what place does he bid us go?"
150. C reads: "all that bothered him."
nursing a boy\textsuperscript{151} of hers, "Woe unto you! Who are these horsemen whom I see entering this house?" She replied, "By God, I don't know who they are except that men visit this house frequently and continuously, on foot and on horseback. We have disapproved of that for days, but we don't know who they are."

Ḥajjār then rode out on his horse, accompanied by one of his young servants (ghulām). He proceeded until he reached the door of their house, where one of their men was in charge. Whenever one of their men came to the door, the doorkeeper went in to his master and informed him, and the latter admitted the visitor. But if a man well-known to them came to the doorkeeper, he would enter without asking permission. When Ḥajjār came to the doorkeeper, the latter did not recognize him, so he asked, "Who are you, may God have mercy on you, and what do you want?" Ḥajjār replied, "I want to meet my comrade."\textsuperscript{152} The doorkeeper then asked, "And what is your name?" He told him, "Ḥajjār b. Abjar." He said, "Stay as you are until I inform them about you, then I will come out to you." So Ḥajjār said to him, "Enter, rightly guided." At that the man entered, and Ḥajjār followed him quickly until he reached the door of a large 
\textit{suffah}\textsuperscript{153} where they were. The doorkeeper had entered their presence meanwhile and said, "This man asks permission to see you. I refused him, saying, 'Who are you?'" He replied, 'I am Ḥajjār b. Abjar.'" Ḥajjār then heard them becoming alarmed and exclaiming, "Ḥajjār b. Abjar! By God! Ḥajjār b. Abjar did not come for any good purpose." When he heard what they said,\textsuperscript{154} he wanted to leave, having confirmed his suspicion about what they were doing. But he wouldn't let himself leave until he saw them for himself. Approaching until he stood between the curtains of the door of the 
\textit{suffah}, he said, "Peace be upon you!" He looked, and there before him was a large group of men, weapons in full view, and coats of mail. Ḥajjār exclaimed, "O God! May He gather them for some good purpose. Who are you, God save you?" 'Ali b. Abī Shimr b. al-Ḥusayn of the Taym al-Ribāb recognized him.

\begin{itemize}
\item \textsuperscript{151} C reads: "boys."
\item \textsuperscript{152} O reads: "I want to meet al-Riyāḥī."
\item \textsuperscript{153} A \textit{suffah} was a covered place attached to a house and open on one side.
\item \textsuperscript{154} O reads: "what was said about him."
\end{itemize}
This 'Ali was one of the eight Kharijites who were put to flight at the Battle of al-Nahr. He was a horseman of the Arabs and one of their pious ascetics, and he was among the best of them. 'Ali said to him, "O Ḥajjār b. Abjar, if you came looking for information, then you have found it, and if you came for something else, then enter and tell us why you came." Ḥajjār replied, "I don't need to enter." And he left.

At that, they said to each other, "Catch and hold him, for he is going to inform on you." A group of them went out right after him—that was just at sunset. When they caught up with him while he rode his horse, they said to him, "Tell us your story and why you came." He replied, "I didn't come for anything which should alarm or frighten you." So they said to him, "Wait until we draw near you and speak with you or until you draw near to us. Inform us, and we will let you know our business and state our concern." He then told them, "I won't draw near to you, and I don't want you to draw near to me." At that 'Ali b. Abī Shimr b. al-Ḥusayn asked him, "Can we trust you not to inform on us for tonight, which would be charitable of you, because we share kinship and a just claim?" Ḥajjār replied, "Yes, you are safe from me for tonight and all nights forever." Then he hurried off and entered al-Ḳūfah, taking his family with him. The others, meanwhile, said to each other, "We aren't certain that he won't inform on us, so let's leave this place at once."

After they had performed the sunset worship, they left, dispersing from al-Ḥirah. Their leader told them, "Join me at the house of Sulaym b. Maḥdūj al-‘Abdī of the Banū Salamah." He then left al-Ḥirah and proceeded until he came to the 'Abd al-Qays. When he came to the Banū Salamah, he sent to Sulaym b. Maḥdūj, who was related to him by marriage. When he came to him, Sulaym took him in along with five or six of his companions. Meanwhile, Ḥajjār b. Abjar returned to his dwelling, and they expected to hear that he had reported them to the authorities or to the people. But he reported them to neither one, and the Kharijites did not hear anything about him that they disliked in that respect.

155. The text reads: *khabar; C reads: khayr, "good."*
During his term as governor, al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bah learned that the Kharijites were rebelling against him, and that they had rallied to one of their men. So al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bah rose before the people, and after praising and extolling God, he continued:

Now then, you know, O people, that I have always desired well-being for your community and have averted harm from you. You also know, by God, that I feared that that would be an evil example for the impudent [ṣufahā‘] among you, but not for the forbearing [ḥulamā‘] and Godfearing. By God, I feared lest I would ever find that the forbearing and Godfearing were punished for the crime of impetuous fools. So restrain the impudent among you, O people, before misfortune overcomes the general public. It has been reported to me that some men among you desire to foment divisions and controversy openly in the city. By God, they will not rebel in any Arab district in this city, but I shall destroy them and make them an exemplary warning for whomever comes after them. So let folk look to themselves before [they] regret [it]. I have taken this stand desiring proof and excuses.

At that, Ma‘qil b. Qays al-Riyahi rose before him, saying “O amir, was any one of those folk named to you? If so, then let us know who they are. If they should belong to us, we would satisfy you with respect to them. If they should belong to others, order those who are obedient among the people of our city to have every tribe bring you its impudent ones.” Al-Mughirah replied, “None of them was named to me, but I have been told that a group intends to rebel in the city.” Ma‘qil then told him, “May God make you prosper, I shall go among my folk and satisfy you about those who belong to them. Let every man among the leaders thus satisfy you about his folk.”

Al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bah then descended and sent to summon the leaders of the people. Then he told them, “You al-

---

156. The text reads: yakūna; C reads: takrahūna, “that you would detest.”
157. That is, al-Kūfah.
158. The text reads: nazala; C reads: taraka, “left.”
ready know what has taken place regarding this matter, and you have heard what I have said, so let every man among the leaders satisfy me with regard to his folk. If not, then by Him than whom there is no other god! I shall surely change from someone you like into someone you will hate. For a vile person only disgraces himself, while he who admonishes is absolved from guilt.”

The leaders then left for their clans, and implored them by God and Islām to point out whomever they thought intended to incite discord or to withdraw from the community. Sa’sā’ah b. Sūḥān also came and stayed among the ‘Abd al-Qays.

[According to] Hīshām—Abū Mikhnaf—Al-Aswad b. Qays al-‘Abdi—Murrāh b. al-Nu‘mān: Sa’sā’ah b. Sūḥān stayed with us, and, by God, some news had reached him that al-Taymi159 and his companions were staying at the house of Sulaym b. Maḥdūj. But in spite of his differences with them and his hatred for their views, he detested having them seized while they were with his clan. He also detested the evil treatment of the People of the House160 by his folk. So he said something nice. At that time we had many notables and there were a good number of us.

Sa’sā’ah stood before us after he performed the afternoon worship, saying:

O assemblage of God’s worshippers, when God, much praise be unto him,”” distributed merit among the Muslims, He bestowed the best part of it on you. So you decided in favor of God’s religion, which He chose for Himself and was satisfied with for his angels and messengers [rusul]. Then you adhered to it until God took His Messenger.162 Then, afterwards, the people quarreled, one faction standing firm, while another apostatized. One faction were hypocrites, while another waited. You, however, persevered in God’s religion, and had faith in Him and His Messenger. You fought the apostates until the religion was

---

159. That is, al-Mustawrid.
160. See above, n. 115.
161. C reads: “to whom be praise [and] much wealth.”
162. That is, he died.
established and God destroyed the evildoers. In return, God continued to increase the good He bestowed on you in everything and in every circumstance, until the community quarreled among its members. One faction said, “We want Ţālhah, al-Zubayr, and ‘Ā’ishah,” while another faction said, “We want the people of the West.” Yet another faction said, “We want ‘Abdallāh b. Wahb al-Rāsibī, [that is, the] Rāsib of the Azd.” But you said, “We only want the People of the House, through whom God first gave us dignity,” [hoping for] a reward from God to you and a settlement. You thus continued to be in the right, adhering to it, and observing it, until God destroyed by means of you and those whose guidance and views were similar to yours, the faithless at the Battle of the Camel and the renegades at the Battle of al-Nahrawān.

He said nothing about the Syrians because the government was theirs at that time.

No folk are worse enemies of God, you, the family of your Prophet, and the community of the Muslims, than these mistaken renegades who separated from our Īmām and allowed our blood to be shed, and who accuse us of unbelief. Beware lest you shelter them in your houses or be secretive about them, for no Arab alive should be worse enemies of them than you. By God, it has been reported to me that some of them are among the living. I am investigating that and asking questions. If I should find that out, truly I

163. Ţalḥah b. ‘Ubaydallāh (d. 36/656) had led ‘Alī’s opponents along with al-Zubayr b. al-‘Āwwām (d. 36/656) and ‘Ā’ishah bt. Abi Bakr (ca. 614–78), Muhammad’s favorite wife, at the Battle of the Camel where both Ţalḥah and al-Zubayr were killed. See N. Abbott, Aishah the Beloved of Mohammad; EI, s.v. ‘A’isha Bint Abi Bakr; EI, s.v. Ťalḥa b. ‘Ubaydallāh; and al-Zubair b. al-‘Awwām.

164. That is, Mu‘āwiyyah and the Syrians.

165. ‘Abdallāh b. Wahb al-Rāsibī (d. 38/660) had led the Khārijītes at the Battle of al-Nahrawān where he was killed. See EI, s.v. ‘Abd Allāh b. Wahb al-Rāsibī.

166. The Battle of the Camel was fought outside al-Baṣrah in Jumādā II 36 (December 656). See EI, s.v. al-Djamal.

would win favor with God by shedding their blood, for that is permitted.

Then he continued:

O assemblage of the 'Abd al-Qays, these governors of ours know you and your views better than anyone, so don't give them grounds to take action against you, for they would be swifter than anything toward you and those like you.\footnote{The text reads: amthalikum; C reads: qatlikum, "and for killing you."}

Then he stepped aside and sat down, and all his folk said, "God curse them!" and "May God be rid of them! By God, we shall not shelter them, and should we know where they are we shall surely point them out to you." The only exception was Sulaym b. Maḥdūj who didn't say anything. But he returned to his folk depressed and despondent, not liking to evict his companions from his dwelling. They would blame him, for they were related by marriage and relied on each other. He also dis-liked having them sought in his house, for they would perish and he with them. When he had arrived, he entered his dwelling. The companions of al-Mustawrid also arrived, coming to him. Every one of them informed al-Mustawrid of what al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah had done with the people and of how their leaders had come to them and stood before them. They told him, "Let us leave. By God, we aren't certain we won't be taken in our clans."

Al-Mustawrid asked them, "Don't you think that the head of the 'Abd al-Qays stood before them just as the heads of the [other] clans stood before their clans?" They replied, "Yes, by God, we think so." He remarked, "Indeed, my host hasn't mentioned anything to me." They said, "We think, by God, that he is embarrassed by you." So he called Sulaym and he came to al-Mustawrid who said, "O Ibn Maḥdūj, I have learned that the heads of the clans stood before them and approached them concerning me and my companions. Did anyone stand before you\footnote{C adds: "Summoning you."} reporting anything of that to you?" He replied, "Yes, Ṣaṣa'ah b. Ṣūḥān stood before us requesting us not to shelter anyone
The Events of the Year 43

sought by them, and they said many things which I disliked mentioning to you. You may consider that something of your business was a burden for me.” Al-Mustawrid told him, “You have honored your dwelling and acted well. Now we, God willing, shall depart from you.” At that, Sulaym exclaimed, “By God, if they want [to take] you in my dwelling, they won’t reach you or one of your companions until I die first.” Al-Mustawrid replied, “God protect you from that.”

Those in al-Mughirah’s prison learned that the people of the city had agreed to expel and to seize the Kharijites among them. Concerning that Mu’adh b. Juwayn b. Ḥuṣayn said:

Indeed, O Sellers!, the time has come for one, who sells himself to God, to depart.

Will you remain out of ignorance in the house of those who err, while everyone of you is hunted down to be killed?

For the enemies assaulted the folk and they set you up for slaughter by a mistaken opinion.

Indeed, O folk, strive for the goal which, when it is mentioned is more righteous and more just.

If only I were with you on the back of a swimmer [sābih], powerful, short-legged, armored, not defenseless.

If only I were with you opposing your enemy, for I am given first the cup of fate to drink.

It is hard for me that you are afraid and driven out.

When I draw out [my sword] unsheathed among the violators,

170. O reads: “they said to him.”
171. Shārūn was a term the Kharijites used for themselves, referring to the doctrine that they sold themselves to God for the reward of heaven.
172. The text reads: ‘udāh, C and O read: ghadāh, “this morning they.”
173. Swimmer is a metaphor for a horse on a battlefield.
When every glorious [person] scatters their group,
when you would say he had turned away and fled, he
would come back,

Showing the blade of the sword in the heat\textsuperscript{174} of the tumult,
he regards steadfastness as exemplary in some places.

It is hard for me that you are wronged and decrease,
and I become sorrowful as a prisoner\textsuperscript{175} in chains.

If I were with you while they headed for you,
then I would stir up dust between the two factions,

For many a group have I broken up, and many an attack
have I experienced, and many an opponent have I left dead
on the ground.

Al-Mustawrid sent word to his companions, telling them,
"Leave this tribe. Let no Muslim person be disgraced unwittingly because of us." Among them\textsuperscript{176} were some who shared their views. They agreed [to go to] Sūrā,\textsuperscript{177} and they left for that town, four, five, and ten at a time. Three hundred men in all presented themselves at Sūrā. Then they set out for the Sarāt\textsuperscript{178} and spent the night there."

When al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah was informed about them, he summoned the leaders of the people, saying, "Destruction and an evil opinion have sent forth these wretches, so whom do you think I should send against them?" ‘Adi b. Ḥātim\textsuperscript{179} stood

\begin{itemize}
\item \textsuperscript{174} The text reads: ḥamas; O reads: hawmah, "in the turmoil of battle."
\item \textsuperscript{175} The text reads: asīr; C reads: amīr, "a commander in chains."
\item \textsuperscript{176} That is, among the ‘Abd al-Qays.
\item \textsuperscript{177} Sūrā was an old Jewish town on the upper Nahr Sūrā (the modern Shaṭṭ Hindiyah branch of the Euphrates) where there was a bridge across the river for the main road from al-Kūfah to al-Madā‘īn, near the later site of Qaṣr Ibn Hubayrah. See Ibn al-Faqih, 
Buldān, 183–84; and Yāqūt, Mu‘jam, III, 184.
\item \textsuperscript{178} The Sarāt Canal was the section of the Nahr Sūrā below the bridge of al-Qāmīghān. See Suhrāb, ‘Ajā‘īb, 25; and Yāqūt, Mu‘jam, III, 377–78.
\item \textsuperscript{179} ‘Adi b. Ḥātim b. ‘Abdallāh b. Sa‘d al-Ṭā‘ī (d. 687/888) was the son of the famous poet, Ḥātim al-Ṭā‘ī, and had converted to Islam from Christianity. He was the leader of the Ṭayyī‘ tribe at al-Kūfah, and he fought on ‘Ali’s side at the Battle of the Camel and at Šīffin. See EP, s.v. ‘Adi b. Ḥātim.
\end{itemize}
up, saying, "We are all their enemy, consider their opinion to be foolish, and remain obedient to you, so whomever of us you wish will set out for them." Ma'qil b. Qays then arose, saying, "You should only send against them one of the notables of the city whom you see around you, whom you find to be attentive and obedient, who differs with them and desires their destruction. I don't think, may God preserve you, that you would send anyone of the people against them who is a greater enemy of their's and more violently against them than I am. So send me against them, and, with God's permission, I will protect you from them." Al-Mughirah replied, "Go in God's name." Three thousand men were then equipped for his expedition. Al-Mugirah told Qabiṣah b. al-Dammūn, "Bring me 'All's faction, and send them out with Ma'qil b. Qays, because he was one of the leaders of his companions." When word was sent to the members of his faction who were known, they gathered together. They were also the strongest in allowing the blood of these renegades to be shed, and were more courageous against them than others, as they had fought them previously.

[According to] Abū Mikhnaf—al-Aswad b. Qays—Murrah b. Munqidh b. al-Nu'mān: I was among those assigned (to go) with him at that time. He continued: Sa'ṣa'ah b. Suhān had stood up after Ma'qil b. Qays, saying, "Send me against them, O amir. By God, I permit their blood to be shed and think lightly of bearing responsibility for it." But al-Mughirah replied, "Sit down! You are only an orator," and that offended Sa'ṣa'ah.

Indeed al-Mughirah said that because he heard that Sa'ṣa'ah would censure 'Uthmān b. 'Affān, and would constantly mention 'Ali and prefer him. He had summoned him previously, saying, "As for you, I have heard that you censure 'Uthmān to one of the people, and I have also heard that you openly proclaim something of 'Ali's superiority. But you do not mention any superiority of 'Ali about which I am ignorant. Moreover, I

---

180. The text reads: musfih, C reads: mubshid, "detestable."
181. That is, Ma'qil b. Qays.
182. That is, 'Uthmān b. 'Affān, the third Commander of the Faithful [23–35 644–55].
know more about that [than you]. But this regime has appeared, and we have been ordered to announce 'Ali's faults to the people. So we leave out much of that which we are supposed to do, and mention [only] what we must in order to protect ourselves from these folk by means of dissimulation. If you discuss 'Ali's superiority, do it secretly among your companions in your homes. As far as [doing this] publicly in the mosque is concerned, the Caliph does not permit this to us, nor does he forgive us for it." Sa'sa'ah would then tell al-Mughirah, "Yes, I will do so." But then al-Mughirah would hear that Sa'sa'ah had resumed doing what he had forbidden him to do. Thus, when Sa'sa'ah stood before him, saying, "Send me against them," al-Mughirah found that the former's dispute with him had aroused his hatred towards Sa'sa'ah. So he said, "Sit down! You are [only] an orator." When al-Mughirah thus offended him, Sa'sa'ah replied, "Am I nothing but an orator? Yes indeed, by God! I favor orators [who are] firm leaders. By God! If you had seen me under the banner of the 'Abd al-Qays at the Battle of the Camel, where the lances clashed splitting the shafts lengthwise and making the heads fall off, you would have known that I am the lion, the beast." At that, al-Mughirah said, "That's enough now. By my life, you were granted an eloquent tongue." Qabisah b. al-Dammun lost no time in sending out the army with Ma'qil. They were three thousand [men who were] the pick of the Shi'ah and their horsemen.

[According to] Abū Mikhnaf—Abū al-Nadr b. Šāliḥ—Šālim b. Rabī'ah: I was sitting with al-Mughirah b. Šu'bah when Ma'qil b. Qays came to pay his respects and bid him farewell. Al-Mughirah told him, "0 Ma'qil b. Qays, I have sent with you horsemen whom I ordered to be selected from the people of the city. So go against this renegade band who withdrew from our community and accused it of unbelief. Summon them to repent and to [re]join the community. If they do so, then accept them and hold back from them; and if they do not, then fight them and seek God's help against them." Ma'qil b. Qays re-

183. The text reads: *tukhtala*, O reads: *takhtallu*, "totter."
184. C reads: "us."
plied, "We shall summon them and excuse them. But, by God, I don't think they will accept, and if they don't accept the truth, we won't accept the false from them. Have you found out, may God cause you to prosper, where the folk are camped?" Al-Mughirah answered, "Yes, Simāk b. 'Ubayd al-Absī"—who was his governor over al-Madā'in—"wrote to me informing me that they set out from the Sarat and proceeded until they halted at Bahurasir, and that they intended to cross over to al-Madinah al-'Atiqah, which contains the residences of the Khusraws and the White [Palace] of al-Madā'in. When Simāk prevented them from crossing, they stayed in the city of Bahurasir. So take the field against them and pursue them until you catch them. Don't give up on them. They are forbidden to stay for more than an hour in any territory where you summon them. So if they accept, fine, and if not, then oppose them; for they would not stay in a territory for two days without corrupting everyone who associates with them."

Ma'qil left that very day and spent the night at Sūrā. Meanwhile, al-Mughirah ordered his mawlā, Warrād, and the latter went out to the people in the congregational mosque and announced, "O people, Ma'qil b. Qays has gone against these renegades and has spent the night at Sūrā. Let none of his companions do differently, lest the amir go out against every Muslim among them. He adjures them not to spend the night at al-Kūfah. Whoever was assigned to this expedition whom we find at al-Kūfah after today will have outlawed himself." [40]

[According to] Abū Mikhnaf—'Abd al-Raḥmān b. Ḥabīb—'Abdallāh b. 'Uqbah al-Ghanawī: I was among those who

185. O reads: al-Qaysi.
186. Bahurasir or Behrasir was the round, walled, Sasanian city of Veh-Ar-takhshatir west of the Tigris which formed the western part of al-Madā'in. See G. Gullini, "Problems of an excavation in northern Babylonia," 25.
187. "The Old City" was the Arabic name for Ctesiphon, the northernmost part of al-Madā'in on the east bank of the Tigris. See S. El-'Ali, "Al-Madā'in and its surrounding area in Arabic literary sources," 422–25.
188. O reads: "is spending."
189. That is, those men assigned to go with him.
190. That is, they will have made it permissible to have their blood shed.
191. C reads: Jundab.
went out with al-Mustawrid b. 'Ullifah, and I was the youngest man among them. We went out until we came to the Sarat and stayed there until everyone in our group had arrived. Then we went forth until we reached and entered Bahurasir. Simāk b. 'Ubayd al-'Absi, who was in al-Madinah al-'Atiqah, had been warned about us, so when we were about to cross the floating bridge to them, he fought us for it, and then he cut it. As a result, we stayed at Bahurasir.

Al-Mustawrid b. 'Ullifah summoned me, saying, "Can you write, O my nephew?" I replied that I could, so he called for parchment and an inkwell for me, and said to write as follows:

From God's Servant ['Abdallāh], al-Mustawrid, Commander of the Faithful, to Simāk b. 'Ubayd. Now then, we take revenge on behalf of our folk for tyranny in judgment, failure to enforce prescriptions, and the monopolization of the fay'. I summon you to the Book of God, Almighty and Great, and the example [sunnah] of His Prophet, and the rule [wilāyah] of Abū Bakr and 'Umar. I also call upon you to disavow 'Uthmān and 'Ali for their innovation in religion [iḥdāth fi al-dīn] and their abandonment of the judgment of the Book. If you accept, you will have come to your senses; and if you do not, we will have run out of excuses for you, and we will permit war against you, and will reject you for your disgraceful act. 'Indeed, God does not love disloyal people.'

192. 'Abdallāh [Servant of God] was used as a prefix for the names of caliphs in Mu‘awiyah's inscription near al-Ṭā‘īf [58/677/8]], on coins of 'Abd al-Malik, al-Ṣaffāh, and al-Mansūr, and on the official weights and commodity stamps of Sulaymān, Yazīd b. 'Abd al-Malik, al-Mansūr, and al-Mahdī. See Lavoix, Catalogue, 17–24, 26; Miles, "Early Islamic Inscriptions," 237; id., Early Arabic Glass Weights and Stamps, Supplement, 4, 8; id., Contributions to Arabic Metrology, I, i, 43–9; id., Numismatic History of Rayy, 23; id., Excavation Coins from the Persepolis Region, 64–7. It also occurs in the heading of a letter ascribed to 'Umar I by Baladhuri, Fītūḥ, 350.

193. The text reads: al-ḥudūd, that is, the punishments explicitly prescribed in the Qur’ān.

194. See above, n. 51.

195. That is, to recognize that Abū Bakr and 'Umar had been legitimate rulers.

196. Qur’ān 8:58.
Al-Mustawrid said, "Go off to Simāk with this letter, deliver it to him, and remember what he says to you, and meet me." Al-Ghanawi continued: I was a callow and inexperienced youth when I reached puberty, and did not have much practical knowledge. I replied, "May God cause you to prosper, if you ordered me to throw myself into the Tigris, I would cast myself into it without disobeying you, but can you guarantee to me that Simāk won't detain you and prevent me from [returning to] you? In that case, the jihād I look forward to would elude me." At that, he smiled and said, "0 my nephew, indeed you are an envoy, and nothing happens to them. If I feared that would happen, I would not send you. You could not take better care of yourself than I would for you."

So I left and crossed over to them at a ford. When I came to Simāk, there were many people around him, and when I drew near they weren't looking at me. But when I approached them, about ten [of them] intercepted me. I supposed, by God, that they intended to seize me and that they did not respect envoys as my master had told me. At that, I drew my sword, exclaiming, "No! By Him in Whose hand is my soul, don't tangle with me or else God will absolve me of guilt concerning you." They asked me, "0 servant of God, who are you?" I replied, "I am a messenger from the Commander of the Faithful, al-Mustawrid b. 'Ullifah." They then asked, "So why did you draw your sword?" I answered, "Because you were rushing at me, and I feared that you would bind me and be treacherous to me." They answered, "You are safe, and indeed, we came to you to go to your side, to hold the top of your sword, and to see why you came and what you ask." I then asked them, "Will I be safe until you return me to my companions?" They replied, "Of course," so I watched my sword. Then I approached until I stood before Simāk b. 'Ubayd. His companions had already crowded around me. Some of them were holding the top of my sword, and some of them were holding my upper arm.

---

197. O reads: "they started to look at me."
198. That is, to make certain that he would not draw it. This was diplomatic protocol.
Between Civil Wars: The Caliphate of Mu'awiyah

I presented my master's letter to him, and when he had read it, he looked up at me, saying, "Al-Mustawrid would not be my choice for Caliph because of what I have seen of his hypocrisy and baseness in drawing his sword against the Muslims. Al-Mustawrid presents me with the denunciation of 'Ali and 'Uthmān and calls me to [recognize] his rule. By God, what a wretched shaykh I would be then." He looked at me and said, "O my son, go to your master and tell him, 'Fear God and desist from your views and enter into the community of the Muslims. If you so wish, I will write to al-Mughirah requesting a guaranteed safe-conduct for you, for you will find him quick to put things right and one who enjoys well-being.'"

I replied to him, "I know what will happen to them on that day." Far from that, indeed we seek security with God on the Day of Resurrection through that which makes you fear us in the temporal world." At that, Simāk responded, "You miserable wretch, how can I be merciful to you?" Then he addressed his companions, "They abandoned [the right way] by what they did. Then they began to recite the Qur'ān to him, pretended to humble themselves, and pretended to weep. So he thought thereby that they had something of the truth. 'Indeed they are only like cattle, nay, rather they are straying from the way.' By God! I never saw folk who were in more manifest error nor a more obvious calamity than those whom you see." I replied, "Say, I did not come to you to revile you, nor to hear your account or that of your companions. Tell me, you give me your answer to what is in this letter; if not, I shall return to my master." At that, he looked at me. Then he said to his companions, "Aren't you astonished at this youth? By God, indeed, he seems greater to me than his father when he says to me 'Are you going to give me your answer to what is in this letter?' Off you go, my son, to your master, however, you may regret [it] if the cavalry should surround you all and the lances are aimed at your breasts. You may wish then you were in your mother's house."

I left him then, and crossed over to my companions. When I

199. That is, what will happen to non-Khārijites on the Day of Judgment.
200. Qur'ān 25:44.
approached my master, he asked, "What did he reply to you?"
I answered, "He did not reply positively. I said thus to him, and
he said thus to me." I then told him the whole story. Al-
Mustawrid then said, "It makes no difference to unbelievers
whether you warn them or not. They will not believe. God has
sealed their hearts and their hearing, and there is a veil con-
cealing their sight. An awful punishment will be theirs."

We stayed in that place of ours for two or three days. Then
we realized that Ma'qil b. Qays was marching against us. Al-
Mustawrid assembled us, and after praising and extolling God,
he said, "Now then, indeed, this senile Ma'qil b. Qays has
headed for us. He is one of the weak, lying Sabā'iyyah and is
an enemy of God and of you, so give me your advice." Some of
us told him, "By God, we only went forth desiring God and to
fight against [jihād] whomever attacks God. But they have
come to us, so where should we go to escape from them? Let us
stand our ground instead, so that God will decide between us
and them, for He is the best of judges." Another group said,
"Let us withdraw instead and turn aside. Let us summon the
people and protest against [our rulers] with supplication." He
responded: "O assemblage of Muslims, by God, I did not go
forth seeking the temporal world, nor its renown, glory or sur-
vival in it. I do not want any of it for myself, and that goes dou-
ble for the things people compete for in it. I value such things
less than the toe of my shoe. I went forth seeking only marty-
dom, and that God would guide me to honor by humbling
some of those who err. I have considered what I consulted you
about. I do not think that I should wait for them to attack me,
while they are exceedingly numerous, but I thought that I
should move on until I go too far. For when they learn of that,
they will go forth in search of me, and will thus become iso-
lated and scattered. We should fight them in those circum-
stances. So let us go forth in the name of God, Almighty and
Great."

201. C reads: "our companions."
203. The Sabā'iyyah were ostensibly named by their enemies after 'Abdallāh b. Saba', an extremist supporter of 'Ali. See EP, s.v. 'Abd Allāh b. Saba'.

The Events of the Year 43

At that, we went forth and proceeded along the bank of the Tigris until we reached Jarjaraya. We then crossed the river and continued as if we were in the territory of Jukhā until we reached Madhare204 where we remained. News of our location reached 'Abdallah b. 'Āmir, so he asked al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah how he was doing with the army which he had sent against the Khārijites and how many of them there were. He was informed of their number, and was told that al-Mughirah had considered a leading man of high standing who had fought against the Khārijites along with 'Ali, and had been among the latter's companions. He sent this man along with 'Ali's faction because of their hostility to the Khārijites. 'Abdallah remarked, "He had the right idea." He then sent to Sharīk b. al-A'war al-Hārithi, who shared 'Ali's views, telling him, "Go forth against this renegade, and choose three thousand men206 from the people. Then pursue them until you drive them out of the Basran territory or kill them." He also told him privately, "Go forth against the enemies of God with those Basrans who consider killing them to be lawful." Sharīk supposed that 'Abdallah meant 'Ali's faction by this, but that he disliked naming them. So he chose people, and urged the horsemen of the Rabī'ah who held Shi'i views, and their leaders agreed. Then he went forth with them, heading for al-Mustawrid at al-Madhar.

(according to) Abū Mikhnaf—Huṣayrah b. 'Abdallah b. al-Hārith—his father 'Abdallah b. al-Hārith: I was among those who went forth with Ma'qil b. Qays, and I accompanied him. By God, I did not leave him for an hour of the day from the time I left. The first place we stopped was Sūra. We remained there for a day until most of his men joined him, then we departed. Stopping at Kuthā, we spent a day until whoever lagged behind joined us. Then, after

204. Jukhā was an administrative district east of the Tigris which included the region of the Diyala River and the Nahrawān Canal. See M. Morony, "Administrative geography," 18–21.
205. Al-Madhar was a town across the southeastern border of Jukhā in the territory of al-Basrah. See Le Strange, Lands, 42–3.
206. C reads: "cavalry."
part of the night had passed, he marched us from Kūthā.

We advanced until we drew near al-Madā‘in, where the people received us and informed us that the Khārijites had already left. By God, that grieved us; we were certain of trouble and a lengthy search. Ma‘qil b. Qays advanced until he halted at the gate of the city of Bahurasir, without entering it. Simāk b. ‘Ubayd went out to him, greeted him, and ordered his servants (ghilman) and mawāli to bring Ma‘qil carrots (jazar), barley, and fodder. They brought enough for him and the army which accompanied him. Ma‘qil b. Qays stayed at al-Madā‘in for three nights; then he assembled his men, saying, “These misguided renegades have left, going their own directions and hoping that you will hurry after them. Thus you would be isolated and scattered, and you would only overtake them after you were tired and worn out. But nothing of that sort is going to happen to you unless the same happens to them.”

Ma‘qil then marched us out from al-Madā‘in, and sent Abū al-Rawwāgh al-Shākiri ahead with three hundred horsemen. He followed after the Khārijites, while Ma‘qil followed him. Abū al-Rawwāgh began to ask about them and to pursue the direction they had taken, until his force crossed over (at) Jarjarāyā in pursuit of them. They followed the direction which the Khārijites had taken and pursued them. He continued persistently until he caught up with them when they were staying at al-Madhār. When he approached them, he took counsel with his men whether or not they should encounter and fight them before Ma‘qil’s arrival. Some of them told him, “Attack them with us, so we may fight them.” Others said, “By God, we don’t think you should be in a hurry to fight them until our commander comes and we encounter them with our entire force.”

According to Abū Mikhnaf—Tulayd b. Zayd b. Rāshid al-Fā‘isī told me that his father was with Abū al-Rawwāgh that day. He said: Abū al-Rawwāgh told us, “When Ma‘qil b. Qays sent me ahead of him, he, indeed, ordered me to follow them, and when I caught up with them not to be in a hurry to fight

\[\text{\textsuperscript{207} C reads: khubz, “bread.”}\]
them until he joined me." All his men then answered him, "So matters are clear now. Draw us aside, so we may be near them until our leader reaches us." He then had us draw aside—that was in the evening.

We spent the entire night on guard until morning. At mid-morning they came out against us. So we went out to meet them. There were three hundred of them and three hundred of us. When they advanced and assaulted us, by God, none of us withstood them. We were put to flight for a while, but then Abū al-Rawwāgh shouted to us, "O horsemen of evil, may God shame you the rest of today! Return! Return!" At that, he attacked, and we attacked with him. When we drew near the folk, he wheeled us about and we turned away, while they turned to attack us. They got the better of us for a long time. We were on excellent trained horses; none of us was hit, and our wounds were slight. Abū al-Rawwāgh then told us, "May your mothers be bereaved of you! Let us turn away and wheel around close to them. Let us not separate from them until our commander arrives. For it would be more disgraceful for us to return to the army having been put to flight by our enemy, without having withstood them until the battle had become fierce and many of you had died fighting."

At that, one of our men answered him, "God will not be ashamed of the truth. By God, they routed us." Abū al-Rawwāgh responded, "May God not increase your kind among us! If we don't leave the battle, we won't be routed. As long as we are engaged in close combat with them and keep near them, we will be in good shape until the army arrives. That is, provided we do not turn back, by God, lest it be said, 'Abū Ḥumrān b. Bujayr al-Hamdānī was routed.' I would only care if it is said, 'Abū al-Rawwāgh was routed.' So stay close, and if they come to you, and you can't fight them, then withdraw. And if they attack you, and you are unable to fight them, stay a while, then withdraw to a safe place. When they return against you,

---

208. C adds: "but not leave our position."
209. The text reads: karrū 'alaynā; C reads: kabārū, "they were too difficult for us."
engage them in close combat and keep near them, for the army will arrive in a while.”

Whenever the Khārijites were charged, they began to withdraw, and took a defensive position. When they began to counterattack, and their group broke up, Abū al-Rawwāgh and his men pursued them on horseback. The Khārijites saw that they would not break off from them, having pursued them thus from the early morning until the first time of worship. When it was time for the noon worship, al-Mustawrid dismounted to worship, and Abū al-Rawwāgh and his men withdrew a mil or two away. His men dismounted and performed noon worship, while they appointed two men to stand guard. They held their position until they performed afternoon worship.

A youth then brought them a dispatch from Ma‘qil b. Qays to Abū al-Rawwāgh. The villagers and passers-by on the road would pass by them and see them fighting. Those who left them heading in the direction from which Ma‘qil was coming, met Ma‘qil and informed him about his men’s encounter with the Khārijites. He would ask, “How do you think they are doing?” They would reply, “We think the Ḥarūriyyah are driving off your men.” So he would inquire, “Do you think my men are engaged in close combat with them, and are fighting them?” They would answer, “Yes, they are engaged in close combat with them and are being routed.” So he said, “If my opinion of Abū al-Rawwāgh was correct, he would never approach you having been routed.” Then Ma‘qil halted them, and sent for Muḥriz b. Shihāb b. Bujayr b. Sufyān b. Khālid b. Minqar al-Tamimī, and said to him, “Stay behind with the weak people, then set out with them slowly until you reach me.” Then he called out to the able-bodied, “Everyone who is able-bodied hurry along with me. Hasten to your brothers for they have encountered their enemy, and I hope that God will destroy the enemy before you reach them.”

Ma‘qil gathered some seven hundred able-bodied, stalwart men, people with excellent horses, and set out hurriedly. When

---

210. The mil was four thousand standard dhírā’, or two km. See Hinz, Islamische Masse und Gewichte, 63.
he approached Abū al-Rawwāgh, the latter said, "This cavalry is covered with dust. Let us advance towards our enemy so that the army will reach us while we are near them. Thus they won't see that we withdraw from them or fear them." Abū al-Rawwāgh then advanced until he halted opposite al-Mustawrid and his companions, and Ma'qil joined them with his men. When he had drawn near them, the sun set, so he dismounted and worshipped with his men, and Abū al-Rawwāgh dismounted and worshipped with his men on the other side, while the Khārijites worshipped as well. Then Ma'qil b. Qays advanced with his men. When he came up to Abū al-Rawwāgh, he summoned him. When the latter came, Ma'qil told him, "Well done, Abū al-Rawwāgh. You have a reputation for steadfastness and persistence." He replied, "May God cause you to prosper. They are tough and disagreeable, so don't get close to them yourself, but send someone to fight them in front of you. You, yourself, stay behind the people in support of them." At that, Ma'qil remarked, "What an excellent idea you have." By God, no sooner had he said it than they charged him and his men. When they came upon Ma'qil, most of his men broke away from him in fear, but he stood firm, and dismounting, he shouted, "The ground! The ground! O people of Islām!" Abū al-Rawwāgh al-Shākirī and many of the horsemen and guards, some two hundred men, dismounted with him. When al-Mustawrid and his companions came upon them, they met them with lances and swords, Ma'qil's cavalry having broken away in panic temporarily. Then Miskīn b. 'Āmir b. Unayf b. Shurayh b. 'Amr b. 'Udas, who was among the most courageous and bravest people that day, shouted to them saying, "O people of Islām! Where would you flee while your commander has dismounted? Aren't you ashamed? Indeed flight is disgraceful, dishonorable, and base." Then he returned to the attack and a large troop of cavalry returned with him and assaulted the Khārijites. Meanwhile Ma'qil b. Qays fought the latter under his banner with those steadfast people who had dismounted with

211. C reads: "select."
212. C adds: "and he stood firm."
him. Together they assaulted the Khārijites until they forced them to the houses. Shortly thereafter Muḥriz b. Shihāb joined them with the people who had stayed behind. When they arrived, Maʾqil had them dismount. Then he formed them into a line, with a right and a left wing. He put Abū al-Rawwāgh in charge of the right wing and Muḥriz b. Bujayr b. Sufyān in charge of the left wing, while Miskin b. ʿĀmir was in charge of the cavalry. Then he told them, "Do not leave your battle lines until morning, and when morning comes, let us rise up against them and do battle with them." The people thus remained at their stations in their battle lines.

(According to) Abū Mikhnaft-ʿAbd al-Raḥmān b. Jundāb-ʿAbdallāh b. ʿUqbah al-Ghanawī: When Maʾqil b. Qays caught up with us, al-Mustawrid told us, "Don't leave Maʾqil alone so that he can marshal the cavalry and infantry against you. Assault them in earnest. Perhaps God will bring him down thereby." At that, we attacked them in earnest. They were defeated and scattered, and then broke in panic. However, Maʾqil leapt from his horse when he saw the flight of his men, and raised his banner, and some of his men dismounted with him. They fought for a long time, and they held their own against us. Then they summoned each other against us and pressed upon us from every side. So we retreated until we had the houses at our backs. We had fought them for a long time, but only a few of us were wounded and killed.

(According to) Abū Mikhnaft-Ḥuṣayrah b. ʿAbdallāh—his father: ʿUmayr b. Abī Ashāʾah al-Azdī was killed that day. He was a leader, and he was among those who dismounted with Maʾqil b. Qays. I was among those who dismounted with him. By God! I shall not forget the words of ʿUmayr b. Abī Ashāʾah while we were fighting together, and he was striking them boldly with his sword:

She knew that I—when they scattered
From me, and the base, the low [were] tormented and tarnished

213. C reads: "By Him Who has my soul in His hand."
214. The text reads: wuddaʾu; C reads: ruddaʾu, "ignoble."
a courageous man, more imposing, for whom fear is insignificant.

He fought fiercely. I never saw anyone fight like him. He wounded many men and was killed. I only know that he killed one person whom he had seized by the neck. 'Umayr fell upon the man's chest and slaughtered him. While he was cutting off the man's head, one of their men attacked him and thrust his lance through the hollow of 'Umayr's throat. He fell down from the man's chest and lay dead on the ground. We assaulted them and drove them back to the village, before withdrawing to our battlefield. I then went to 'Umayr hoping that a spark of life was still in him, but he had expired. So I returned to my companions and remained with them.

According to Abu Mikhnaf—'Abd al-Rahmān b. Jundab—'Abdallāh b. 'Uqbah al-Ghanawi: We had stationed ourselves in the early part of the night when a man came to us whom we had dispatched at the beginning of the night. Some of those who passed by on the road had informed us that an army was approaching us from al-Basrah, but we had paid no attention. We said to a local man whom we employed, "Go and find out if an army has come against us from the direction of al-Basrah." He returned while we were waiting for the Kufans, and told us, "Yes, Shank b. al-A'war has come to you. I met a squadron a farsakh away at the time of the first (morning) worship. I don't think they will camp where you are until tonight or early tomorrow morning." We were bewildered at his words. Al-Mustawrid then said to his companions, "What do you think?" We replied, "We think as you do." He said, "I don't think that I can resist all of them. Let us return in the direction from which we came. The Basrans will not pursue us into the territory of al-Kūfah. Only the people of our own city will pursue us then." We then asked him, "Why is that?" And he replied, "Fighting the people of one city is easier for us than fighting the people of both." We responded "Lead us wherever you like." He said, "Dismount so your animals may rest a

---

215. The text reads: raw'; C reads: hayj, "combat."
216. A farsakh was three mil or six km. See Hinz, Islamische Masse und Gewichte, 62.
while, and feed them; then pay attention to what I command you to do."

At that, we dismounted and fed our animals. Then there was a respite for a while between us and the Kufs. They had withdrawn from the village for fear that we would attack them at night. When we had rested our mounts and fed them, al-Mustawrid gave the order and we mounted our animals. Then he said, "Enter the village, then leave at the rear of it, taking a lout [ilj] with you who will bring you out the back way. Then he will double back with you until he brings you back to the road by which you came. Leave [Ma'il's men] where they are; they will not notice you for most of the night or until morning." Then we entered the village. After taking a lout, we left with him leading us, and said, "Take us around behind this line so that we may return to the road by which we came." He did so, bringing us back until we stood on the road by which we had come. Then we returned by that road and advanced until we halted at Jarjaraya.

(According to) Abū Mikhnaf—Husayrah b. 'Abdallāh—his father 'Abdallāh b. al-Ḥārith: I was the first one who noticed their departure.217 I said, "May God make you prosper. Dealing with this enemy has made me suspicious for a long while. They were stationed; we saw their shape. Then it disappeared after a while. I fear that they are abandoning their position in order to deceive the people." At that, Ma'il inquired, "What do you fear their stratagem is?" I replied, "I fear that they will attack the people at night." When he answered, "By God, I do not feel safe from that," I told him to be prepared for it. He responded, "Stay as you are until I take a look. O 'Attāb, set out with whomever you like so that you may get close to the village, and observe whether you see any of them or hear word of them."218 Ask the villagers about them." At that he went off with a fifth of the raiders galloping until he observed the village. He began to notice that no one spoke to him. When he shouted to the villagers, some of them came out to him. So he

---

217. The text reads: dhahābihim; O reads: dahā'ihim, "their cunning."
218. Cairo reads: "hear a sound from them."
asked them about the Kharijites, and they replied, "They left, and we don't know how they went."

When 'Attab returned to Ma'qil and told him the news, Ma'qil said, "I don't feel safe from night attacks. Where are the Mu'dar?" So the Mu'dar came, and he said, "Stay here." Then he asked, "Where are the Rabia'?" He set the Rabia', the Tamim, and the Hamdan facing different directions, while the rest of the Yaman faced another direction. Each of those quarters faced a different direction while its back was near the back of the other quarter. Ma'qil made rounds among them until he had stopped at every quarter, saying, "O people, if they come to you, let the others know, and fight them. Don't abandon your position under any circumstances until you receive my order. None of you is to abandon his sector until morning. Then we shall see what we think." They remained on guard until morning, fearing a night attack by the Kharijites. When morning came, they dismounted and worshipped. People came and told them that the Kharijites had returned by the road on which they had come, going back to their starting point.

Sharik b. al-A'war arrived with an army of Basrans and dismounted where Ma'qil b. Qays was. He met Sharik, and they questioned each other for a while. Then Ma'qil told Sharik, "I am going to follow in their track until I overtake them. Perhaps God will destroy them, but I am not certain that, if I fail to search for them, their [numbers] will not multiply." Sharik then got up and assembled some of his outstanding men, including Khalid b. Ma'dan al-Ta'i and Bayhas b. Suhayb al-Jarmi. He proposed to them, "O men, would you like to go with our Kufan brothers in search of this common enemy of ours until God annihilates them? Then we will return." At that, Khalid b. Ma'dan and Bayhas al-Jarmi replied, "No, by God! We won't do it. We approached them to drive them out from our territory, and to prevent them from entering it. God spare us their inconvenience! We are going back to our city. It is for the Kufans to defend their own territory from these dogs." He responded, "Woe unto you! Obey me with regard to them, for they are evil folk. There are wages and favor with the regime."
for you in fighting them." Bayhas al-Jarmi then told him, "By God! then we are as the brother of the Banū Kinānāh"220 said:

Like a wet-nurse for other's children who lets
her own sons perish, so she doesn’t patch her tatters thereb y.

Haven’t you heard that the Kurds have rebelled in the mountains of Fārs?" Sharik replied, “I have heard that." Bayhas continued, “So you order us to go off with you to protect the territory of the Kūfans, to fight their enemy, and to abandon our land.” Sharik responded, “What are the Kurds? Indeed a squadron of you will be enough for them.” At that, Bayhas retorted, "And a squadron of Kūfans will be sufficient for this enemy whom you appoint us to deal with. Upon my life! If they were obliged to help us, then we would have to help them, but they don’t need us any more. There is strife in our territory similar to that in theirs. Let them take care of what is before them, and we must do likewise. Upon my life! If we obey you with regard to pursuing them, and you pursue them, you will have made bold with your commander. You did what was proper. You should find out his opinion about what he permits you to do."

When he saw that, Shank said to his companions: “Go and depart.” And he went himself to meet Ma’qil—both of them were sympathetic to Shi’ite views. Sharik said, “Indeed, by God, I have tried to get those who are with me to follow me so that I can march with you against your enemy, but they prevailed over me.” Ma’qil replied, “May God do as much for you. We don’t need that. Indeed, by God, had they made an effort, I hope none of them would have escaped to tell the tale.”

(According to) Abū Mikhnaf—al-Ṣa‘qāb b. Zuhayr—Abū Imāmah ‘Ubaydallāh221 b. Junādah—Sharīk b. al-A‘war: When he said, “By God, had they made an effort, I hope none of them would have escaped to tell the tale,” by God, I detested it. I felt sorry for him, and considered such talk to be wrong. By

---

221. That probably is, the Khārijites.
224. The text reads: shibh, C reads: sabab, “the reason for.”
God, there were no unjust people among us.

(According to) Abū Mikhnaf—Ḥuṣayrah b. ‘Abdallāh—his father, ‘Abdallāh al-Ḥārith al-Azdi: We were happy when we learned that al-Mustawrid b. ‘Ullīfah and his companions had doubled back, saying, “Let’s pursue them and confront them at al-Madā’in, and if they draw near to al-Kūfah it would be even more destructive for them. Ma‘qil b. Qays then summoned Abū al-Rawwāgh, telling him, “Pursue him with the men who were with you [before] and pin him down for me until I catch up with you.” He said, “Give me more men than that, for it will make me stronger against the Khārijites if they want to fight with me before your arrival. We have had trouble with them.” Ma‘qil then increased his force by three hundred men. Abū al-Rawwāgh thus pursued the enemy with six hundred men.

The Khārijites advanced rapidly until they halted at Jarjarāya. Abū al-Rawwāgh also advanced quickly on their heels until he caught up with them at Jarjarāya where they had camped. He also camped there at sunrise. When they saw that it was Abū al-Rawwāgh with the vanguard, they told each other, “Fighting these will be easier than fighting whoever comes after them.” They came out against us, sending ten and twenty of their horsemen at a time. We did likewise, and the two troops attacked each other for a while, being mingled together. When they saw that, the Khārijites united and assaulted us in earnest with a single charge. They drove us back until we left the field to them. Then Abū al-Rawwāgh called to his men saying, “O evil horsemen! O evil defenders! How miserably you fought the folk. To me! To me!” He then prevailed upon about one hundred horsemen and engaged the Khārijites in close combat, while saying:

Indeed the youth, every youth, who is not dismayed,
when the coward turned away from the blow of the spear point,
She knew that I, when the injury alighted,
would frighten, on the day of battle, a bold hero.

225. C reads: “follow you.”
When he engaged with them, he fought them for a long time. Then his men engaged them from every side, fighting earnestly with them until they drove the enemy back to their former position. When al-Mustawrid and his companions saw that, they thought that if Ma‘qil came to them at that time, he would certainly destroy them. So al-Mustawrid and his companions departed until they crossed the Tigris and entered the territory of Bahurasir. Abū al-Rawwāgh crossed after them and pursued them, and Ma‘qil b. Qays arrived, following Abū al-Rawwāgh, and crossed the Tigris after him. Al-Mustawrid advanced towards al-Madinah al-‘Atiqah, but when Simāk b. ‘Ubayd learned of that, he went out and crossed over to it. Then he brought out his men and the people of al-Madā‘in. He lined them up at (the city) gate, and set archers on the wall. When the Khārijites learned of that, they went off until they halted at Sābāṭ.226 Abū al-Rawwāgh also advanced in search of the folk until he passed Simāk b. ‘Ubayd at al-Madā‘in. When the latter informed him of the direction which they had taken, Abū al-Rawwāgh pursued them until he halted where they were at Sābāṭ.

(According to) Abū Mikhnaf—‘Abd al-Rahlmān b. Ḥabib—‘Abdallāh b. ‘Uqbah al-Ghanawi: When Abū al-Rawwāgh halted where we were, al-Mustawrid summoned his companions, saying, “These men who have halted here with Abū al-Rawwāgh are the noble companions of Ma‘qil. By God, he only sent his defenders and horsemen ahead against you. By God, if I knew that when I hurried to him, racing with these men of his,227 I would take Ma‘qil by surprise while they were still some way off,228 I would do so. Let one of you go out, and ask about Ma‘qil. Where is he and how far has he gotten?”

I went out myself and met some louts who came from the direction of al-Madā‘in. I asked them, “What have you heard

226. Sābāṭ was a bridgehead on the Kūfān side of the Nahr al-Malik, near the point where that canal emptied into the Tigris, on the main road from al-Kūfah to al-Madā‘in. See El-‘Ali, “Madā‘in,” 435; Yāqūt, Mu’jam, IV, 569.
227. The text reads: bādartu aṣhabahu āhulai ilayhi.
228. The text reads: yugārifuhu bi-sā‘atin; O and Cairo read: yufāriqūhu bi-sā‘atin, “were still some distance [lit. “a while”] away from him.” See text, p. [62].
about Ma'qil b. Qays?" They replied, "A messenger came to Si-
māk b. 'Ubayd from Ma'qil. Simāk had sent him to meet Ma'-
qil, and to see how far he had gotten and where he wished to
halt. The messenger returned to Simāk and said 'I left him
camping at Daylamāyā"—it is one of the villages of Bahu-
rasir on an inlet of the Tigris which belonged to Qudāmah b.
al-'Ajlān al-Azdī. I asked him, "How far is this place between
us and them?" They responded, "Three farsakhs [eighteen km]
or thereabouts."

When I returned to my master and told him the news, he
said to his companions, "Ride!" So they did, and al-Mustawrid
advanced until he brought them to the Sābāt Bridge. This was
the bridge over the Nahr al-Malik. He was on the side of the
bridge leading toward al-Kūfah, while Abū al-Rawwâgh and his
men were on the side leading toward al-Madā'in. We advanced
until we stopped at the bridge. Then al-Mustawrid told us, "Let
a detachment of you halt." So when about fifty of us halted, he
said, "Cut this bridge." So we dismounted and cut it. When
Abū al-Rawwâgh's men saw us stopping on horseback, they
thought that we wanted to cross over to them. They lined up
opposite us and marshalled themselves thereby distracting us
from our cutting of the bridge.

We then took a guide from the people of Sābāṭ and told him,
"Lead us to Daylamāyā." So he led us, moving quickly, and off
we went with our horses taking us swiftly at the amble and
the gallop. Shortly afterwards we looked down upon Ma'qil and
his men while they were getting underway. When he saw us
his men had already separated from him and his vanguard and
men were not with him. One squadron of them had been sum-
moned and another squadron had withdrawn. They were taken
by surprise. Upon seeing us, Ma'qil set up his standard and dis-
mounted, calling out, "O servants of God! The ground! The

229. C reads: Dilmayāṭhā.
230. The text reads: jānit; Cairo reads: jānib, "beside."
231. The Nahr al-Malik was a canal linking the Euphrates and Tigris Rivers,
west of al-Madā'in. See Le Strange, Lands, 68.
232. The text reads: talma'u binā, lit. "flashing us"; C reads: hatta balagha
binā, "until our horses brought us."
ground!” At that, about two hundred men dismounted with him.

When we began to attack them, they met us with the tips of their lances, while kneeling on their knees, and we could not overpower them. Al-Mustawrid then said to us, “Leave these alone since they have dismounted, and attack their horses so that you may come between them and their horses. If you strike their horses, they will be [like] slaughter-camels for you after a while.” So we attacked their horses, separating them from the men and cutting their reins. They had tied the horses together, but they now went off in all directions. Then we turned against the people, who were withdrawing and advancing. We attacked them so that we divided them up. Then we advanced toward Ma‘qil b. Qays and his men, who were still on their knees. We attacked them, but they did not budge. We attacked them again, but they still did not budge.

At that, al-Mustawrid told us, “Fight them at close quarters. Half of you take the field against them.” Half of us dismounted and the rest remained on horseback with him. I was among those on horseback. By God, we wanted to get at them. By God, we fought them, and we believed we had overwhelmed them when the vanguard of Abū al-Rawwāgh’s men, who were his noble companions and horsemen, burst upon us. Upon drawing near, they charged us, and at that we all dismounted, and fought them until our master and theirs were both hit. I don’t believe there was anyone who escaped from them on that day except me. By God, I believe I was the youngest man there.

(According to) Abū Mikhnaf—‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Ḥabīb—‘Abdallāh b. ‘Uqbah al-Ghanawi: My informant related this account to me on two occasions, once during the governorship of Muḥ’ab b. al-Zubayr at Bājumayrā, and once while we were

---

233. The text reads: *mutazahhīlin*, C reads: *mutarakjālin*,”going on foot.”
234. The text reads: *mutaquddamin*, C reads: *munfariqin*,”separating.”
235. C reads: “They did not budge, so we attacked them, but they were steadfast. Then we attacked them again, but they were steadfast.”
236. O reads: “reinforcements from their vanguard.”
237. Muḥ’ab b. al-Zubayr was governor of al-Baṣrah, 67–72[686–91].
with 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Muḥammad b. al-Ash'ath\textsuperscript{238} at Dayr al-
[60] Jamājim.\textsuperscript{239} He said, "By God, he was killed that day at Dayr al-
Jamājim, the day of the rout, while I saw him coming against
the enemy, striking them with his sword." I said to him at
Dayr al-Jamājim, "You related this account to me at Bājumayrā
with Muṣ'ab b. al-Zubayr, but I did not ask you how you [alone]
escaped among your companions." He replied, "I tell you, by
God, when our master was killed, all except five or six of his
men were killed."

He continued: We assaulted a group of about twenty men of
the enemy until they gave way. I reached a horse standing with
its saddle and bridle on it. I did not know what the story was
with its master, whether he had been killed, or had dis-
mounted to fight and left it. I went up to it and, taking its bri-
dle, I put my foot in the stirrup and seated myself firmly upon
it. By God, Ma'qil's men assaulted me, and reached me, but
when I touched the side of the horse, by God, it was better than
serviceable. Some of them\textsuperscript{240} galloped after me, but they did not
keep up with me. I then proceeded, galloping the horse, and
that was in the evening. When I knew that I had discouraged
them, and felt safe, I began to ride (at a) trot. I continued at that
pace, and when I met a lout, I told him, "Lead me quickly to
where I can leave the main road, the Kūfah Road." He did so,
and, by God, shortly afterwards I reached Kūthā. I went on un-
til I came to a wide part of the river. I plunged the horse into it
and crossed it. Then I rode onward. When I came to Dayr Ka'b, I
halted. I hobbled my horse and let him rest, and took a nap my-
self. Then I awoke quickly and mounted upon the horse. Thus I
traveled for part of the night, (rested), and spent the rest of the
night travelling. I worshipped in the early morning at al-

\textsuperscript{238} 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Muḥammad b. al-Ash'ath b. Qays al-Kindi was to
lead a major revolt against al-Ḥajjāj, 80–82 [699–701] or 83 [703]. See EI\textsuperscript{2}, s.v.
Ibn al-Ash'ath.

\textsuperscript{239} Dayr al-Jamājim, the "monastery of the skulls", was the place near al-
Kūfah where al-Ḥajjāj defeated Ibn al-Ash'ath for the first time in Sha'bān 82
[September 701]. See Yaqryūt, Mu'jam, II, 652; and EI\textsuperscript{3} s.v. Ibn al-Ash'ath.

\textsuperscript{240} C reads: "a group of them."
The Events of the Year 43

Muzāhimiyyah, two farsakhs (twelve km) distant from Qubbayn.241

I then proceeded until I entered al-Kūfah in broad daylight. After a while I came to Sharik b. Namlah al-Muḥāribi, and I informed him about myself and about his companions. I also asked him to meet al-Mughirah b. Shu’bah and get a guarantee of safe-conduct from him for me. He told me, “You will obtain the guarantee of safe-conduct, God willing, and you have come with good news.” By God, I spent the night grieved by the affairs of the people. Sharik b. Namlah al-Muḥāribi went quickly until he came to al-Mughirah, asked his permission (to enter), and was admitted. Sharik said, “I have good news and a request, so grant my request and then I shall announce my good news to you.” Al-Mughirah replied, “Your request is granted, so give your good news.” Sharik continued, “Grant a guarantee of safe-conduct to ʿAbdallāh b. ʿUqbah al-Ghanawi, for he was with the folk.” He answered, “I grant him a guarantee of safe-conduct. By God, I wish that you would bring me all of them so that I could grant them a guarantee of safe-conduct.” Sharik said, “I announce that all of the folk have been killed. My friend was with the folk, and according to what he told me, none of them but he escaped.” Al-Mughirah asked, “So how did Maʿqil b. Qays do?” Sharik replied, “May God cause you to prosper, he doesn’t know anything about our companions.”

Before he had finished his speech, Abū al-Rawwāgh and Miskin b. ʿAmir b. Unayf arrived bringing good news of the victory. They related that Maʿqil b. Qays and al-Mustawrid b. ʿUllifah each sent against his opponent, a lance in al-Mustawrid’s hand and a sword in Maʿqil’s hand. Thus they encountered each other, and when al-Mustawrid thrust his lance at Maʿqil’s breast so that the spearhead went out his back, Maʿqil struck him with the sword on his head so that it sank into the midst of his brain. Thus they both fell dead.

(According to) Abū Mikhnaṭ—Ḥuṣayrah b. ʿAbdallāḥ—his father: When al-Mustawrid b. ʿUllifah saw us halting at Sābāṭ

241. Qubbayn was a village just across the bridge of Sūrā. See Yāqūt, Muʾjam, IV, 35.
where he was, he approached the bridge and cut it. We were thinking that he wanted to cross to us. We went up from the
dark cultivated land of Sābāt to the desert that was between al-
Madā'in and Sābāt. We were arrayed and deployed. But we
waited a long time without seeing them coming out to us. Abū
al-Rawwāgh then said, "Indeed they are up to something. Is
there someone who will inform us about them?" At that, I
said, "I and Wuhayb b. Abū Asha' al-Azdi will inform you
about that and bring you news about them." When both of us
went close to the bridge on our horses and found it severed, we
supposed that the folk had only cut it out of fear of us and out
of alarm at us. We then returned galloping quickly until we
reached our master and informed him about what we saw. Abū
al-Rawwāgh asked, "What do you suppose?" We replied, "They
only cut the bridge in fear of us and out of alarm at us which
God put in their hearts." He remarked, "By my life! The folk
did not rebel" desiring flight, but they have deceived you. Do
you hear? By God, I certainly think they said that Ma'qil sent
Abū Rawwāgh against you only with his noble companions. If
you could leave the latter where they are and make a forced
march toward Ma'qil and his men, you may find them peace-
fully unguarded when you come upon them. Thus they cut the
bridge in order to divert you from catching up with them until
they come upon your commander by surprise. To the rescue!
Rescue lies in searching." We took it to heart that it was as he
had said. We shouted to the people of the village, and when
they came quickly, we told them, "Tie the bridge quickly."
We urged them on, and in a short while they were finished
with it. Then we crossed over it and pursued [the enemy]
quickly without caring about anything else. We kept after
them, and, by God, we did not cease to ask about them. We
were told, "So far they have been ahead of you."

By God, we did not cease to seek them fervently, desiring to
catch up with them, until the first person who fled from them
met us. Ma'qil's men had been routed without one person
caring about another. When Abū al-Rawwāgh met them, he

242. O reads: "gather."
243. C reads: "begin to march."
shouted to the people, "To me! To me!" The people came to him and took refuge with him. He then said, "Woe unto you! Why are you coming?" They replied, "We don't know. We were certainly surprised. The folk were with us among our army while we were separated from each other. For they assaulted us and split us up." Abū al-Rawwāgh asked, "What did the commander do?" Someone told him, "He dismounted and was fighting." Someone else said, "I certainly saw him killed." Abū al-Rawwāgh told them, "O People! Return with me. If we reach our commander alive, we shall fight along with him. And if we find that he has perished, we shall fight them. For we are horsemen of the people of the city selected for this enemy. Let neither the opinion of your commander, nor those of the people of the city about you be spoiled there. I swear by God, if you should see the Khārijites after they had killed Ma'qil, it would not be proper for you to disengage from them until you take revenge on them or perish. Set out with God's blessing." He then set out and we did likewise. He began to shout to each person he met, bringing him back. He summoned his outstanding men, saying, "Strike the faces of the people and turn them back."

We advanced turning the people back until we reached the army. Suddenly we were where the standard of Ma'qil b. Qays was set up. Two hundred or more cavalymen of the people were with him while their outstanding men were only with them on foot. They were fighting the fiercest battle that people ever heard of. When we burst upon them, suddenly we were among the Khārijites who had almost overwhelmed our companions, while the latter, holding out against that, were fighting them. When they saw us, they returned to the attack, and then assaulted the Khārijites. The Khārijites withdrew a short distance from them, and we reached our companions.

Abū al-Rawwāgh looked at Ma'qil, and saw that he was summoning, encouraging, and inciting his men. He asked Ma'qil, "Are you alive? May all my uncles be your ransom." He replied that he was and then assaulted the folk. At that, Abū al-Rawwāgh called out to his men, "Don't you see your com-

244. The text reads: yafsudanna; O reads: yuqbalna, "be disapproved."
mander is alive? Assault the folk!” He attacked and we attacked the folk all together. We delivered a jolting shock to their cavalry, while Ma‘qil and his men assaulted them.

At that, al-Mustawrid dismounted and shouted to his companions, “O band of Sellers! The ground! The ground! By God, besides Whom there is no god save He, Paradise belongs to whomever is killed with the genuine intention of jihād against these oppressors and their expression of enmity.” They all dismounted then, and we did likewise. We then advanced against al-Mustawrid with unsheathed swords and clashed with them for much of the day. It was as violent as any battle the people had ever fought. However al-Mustawrid called out to Ma‘qil, saying, “O Ma‘qil, show yourself to me!” So Ma‘qil went out to him, and we said to Ma‘qil, “We implore you not to go out against this dog of whose soul God has despaired.” He replied, “No, by God, no man ever challenged me to a duel that I shrank from.” So he marched against him with a sword while the other went out against him with a lance. We shouted to Ma‘qil to meet his opponent with a lance like his but he refused. Al-Mustawrid approached him and transfixed him so that the spearhead went out his back, while Ma‘qil struck him with his sword so that it sank into the midst of his (opponent’s) brain. Al-Mustawrid fell down dead, and Ma‘qil was killed.

Ma‘qil had said to us when he showed himself to al-Mustawrid, “If I perish, your commander is to be ‘Amr b. Muhāriz b. Shihāb al-Sa‘di, then al-Minqari.” So when Ma‘qil perished, ‘Amr b. Muhriz took the standard, and said, “If I am killed, Abū al-Rawwāgh is to be in charge of you, and if Abū al-Rawwāgh is killed, your commander is to be Miskin b. ‘Āmir b. Unayf,” who at that time was a raw youth. Then he charged with his standard and ordered the people to assault the enemy. Before long they had killed the Khārijites.

The events of this year included the appointment of ‘Abdallāh b. Khāzim b. Zabyān as governor of Khurāsān by ‘Abdallāh b. ‘Āmir, and the departure of Qays b. al-Haytham from that post. According to what Abū Mikhnaf reported from Muqāṭil b.

---

245. That is, with the swords.
246. That is, belonging to the Minqari subdivision of the Banū Sa‘d.
The Events of the Year 43

Hayyān, the cause of that was that Ibn 'Āmir wanted to dismiss Qays b. al-Haytham because he considered him to be slow in delivering the tax revenues. Ibn Khāzīm told him, "Appoint me governor of Khurāsān, and I will satisfy you with regard to it and with regard to Qays b. al-Haytham." Qays learned that Ibn 'Āmir disapproved of him because of his contempt for him and his suspension of gifts, and that he had appointed Ibn Khāzīm governor. When he feared that Ibn Khāzīm would make trouble for him and go over his accounts, he abandoned Khurāsān and approached (Ibn 'Āmir at al-Baṣrah). As a result, Ibn 'Āmir's anger at him increased, and he said, "You abandoned the frontier region." He beat and imprisoned Qays and sent a man belonging to the Banū Yashkur to be in charge of Khurāsān. (According to) Abū Mikhnaf: Ibn 'Āmir sent Aslam b. Zur'ah al-Kilābi when he dismissed Qays b. al-Haytham.

(According to) Abū b. Muḥammad—Abū 'Abd al-Raḥmān al-Thaqafi—his shaykhs: Ibn 'Āmir put Qays b. al-Haytham in charge of Khurāsān during the rule of Mu‘āwiyyah. Ibn Khāzīm told Ibn 'Āmir, "You sent a weak man to Khurāsān. I fear that if he encounters war that he will be put to flight with the people. You would thus destroy Khurāsān, and your uncles would be dishonored." Ibn 'Āmir asked, "What would you suggest?" He replied, "Write a pledge for me that if Qays abandons your enemy I will take his place." Ibn 'Āmir wrote that for him. When a group from Tukhārīstān rose up, Qays b. al-Haytham sought advice, and Ibn Khāzīm advised him to draw back (his forces) until his outposts joined him. Thereupon, he drew back. When he had marched one or two days' journey from his position, Ibn Khāzīm made his pledge public, took over the affairs of the people, encountered the enemy, and put them to flight. The news reached the two cities and Syria. At that, the Qaysiyah became angry, saying, "Ibn Khāzīm deceived Qays and Ibn 'Āmir." Their anger increased until they complained to Mu‘āwiyyah. When the latter sent for Ibn Khā-

---

247. That is, Ibn 'Āmir's family.
248. Tukhārīstān is the region to the south of the upper Oxus River. See Le Strange, Lands, 426-7.
249. That is, al-Baṣrah and al-Kūfah.
250. That is, the faction of Qays b. Haytham.
zim, he came and apologized for what was said about him. Mu‘awiyah told him, "Stand up and apologize to the people to-
morrow." Ibn Khāzim returned to his companions and said, "Indeed, I was put in charge of the sermon [khutbah], but I am
not a master of speech. So sit around the pulpit [minbar], and
when I speak, show your approval." He then stood up on the
morrow and after praising and extolling God, he spoke, "In-
deed, a leader of worship [imām] must either deliver the ser-
mon, finding no escape from it, or he stupidly pours [it] out
from his head heedless of what goes forth from him. I am nei-
erth kind. Whoever is acquainted with me knows that I am
aware of opportunities, leaping at them, stopping at dangers,
penetrating with the raiding party, and distributing with equal-
ity. I implore you, by God, whoever has known that about me,
say that I am right." His companions around the pulpit re-
sponded, "You are right." He then said, "O Commander of the
Faithful, indeed, you are among those I implored. Say what you
know." Mu‘awiyah replied, "You are right."

[According to] ‘Ali—a shaykh of the Banū Tamīm called
Mu‘ammar—some knowledgeable people: Qays b. al-Haytham
came to Ibn ‘Āmir from Khurāsān unwillingly because of Ibn
Khāzim. So Ibn ‘Āmir beat him one hundred (times), shaved
him, and imprisoned him. When his mother interceded for
him, he released him.

According to what is said, Marwān b. al-Ḥakam led the peo-
ples in the pilgrimage this year, while he was in charge of al-
Madinah. Khalīd b. al-‘Āṣ b. Hishām was in charge of Mecca
and al-Mughīrah b. Shu‘bah was in charge of al-Kūfah, while
Shurayh was in charge of rendering judgment. ‘Abdallāh b.
‘Amir was in charge of al-Baṣrah, Fārs, Sijistān, and Khurāsān,
while ‘Umayr b. Yathribi was in charge of rendering judg-
ment there.251

251. Most probably at al-Baṣrah. C reads: quḍā‘i Baṣratan, “rendering judg-
ment at al-Baṣrah.”
The Events of the Year

44

(April 4, 664–March 24, 665)

Among the events that occurred during this year was the invasion of Byzantine territory by the Muslims led by ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Walid, their winter campaign there, and Busr b. Abi Arṭāt’s raid at sea.

In this year Mu‘āwiya also dismissed ‘Abdallāh b. ‘Āmir (as governor) of al-Baṣrah. The reason for this was that Ibn ‘Āmir was easy-going and generous and would not restrain the impudent. Al-Baṣrah was ruined because of that while he was governor there for Mu‘āwiya. (According to) ‘Umar b. Shabbah —Yazid al-Bāhilī: Ibn ‘Āmir complained to Ziyād about the corruption of the people and the manifestation of evildoing. When Ziyād advised, “Unleash the sword among them,” Ibn ‘Āmir responded, “Indeed, I hate to reform them by my own corruption.”

(According to) ‘Umar—Abū al-Ḥasan: Ibn ‘Āmir was gentle and easy-going, governing smoothly; he would not punish (anyone) during his regime, nor cut off (the hand of) a thief. When he was spoken to about that, he replied, “I am on intimate terms with the people. How can I look at a man whose father’s or brother’s hand I have cut off?”
(According to) 'Umar—'Ali—Maslamah b. Muhārib: Ibn al-Kawwā—Ibn al-Kawwā's name was 'Abdallāh b. Awfāh—visited Mu‘āwiyyah. When the latter asked him about the people Ibn al-Kawwā said, "As far as the people of al-Baṣrah are concerned, the impudent among them have prevailed over them while their governor is weak." When Ibn 'Āmir learned what Ibn al-Kawwā had said, he appointed Ṭufayl b. 'Awf al-Yashkurī governor of Khurāsān. At that time there was a mutual estrangement between him and Ibn al-Kawwā. At that Ibn al-Kawwā remarked, "Indeed, this Ibn Dajājah doesn't know me very well. Did he think that the governorship of Ṭufayl over Khurāsān would displease me? I would like for every Yashkurī remaining on earth to be hostile to me as long as he appointed them as governors." Mu‘āwiyyah then dismissed Ibn 'Āmir and sent al-Ḥārith b. 'Abdallāh al-Azdi.

(According to) al-Qaḥdhamī: Ibn 'Āmir asked, "Who among the people is the worst enemy of Ibn al-Kawwā?" When he was told that it was 'Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh, Ibn 'Āmir appointed him governor of Khurāsān, and Ibn al-Kawwā said what he did.

(According to) 'Umar—Abū al-Ḥasan—a shaykh of the Thaqīf and Abū 'Abd al-Raḥmān al-Iṣbahānī: Ibn 'Āmir sent a delegation to Mu‘āwiyyah, so they were there at the same time as a delegation of Kūfāns, among whom was Ibn al-Kawwā al-Yashkurī. When Mu‘āwiyyah asked them about Iraq and especially about al-Baṣrah, Ibn al-Kawwā told him, "O Commander of the Faithful, indeed, impudent persons have devoured the people of al-Baṣrah while their government was too weak to deal with them, and it has paralyzed and weakened Ibn 'Āmir." At that Mu‘āwiyyah told him, "You talk about the Baṣrans while they are present." When the delegation returned to al-Baṣrah, and informed Ibn 'Āmir of that, he was angry and asked, "Who among the people of Iraq is the worst enemy of Ibn al-Kawwā?" When he was told that it was 'Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh al-Yashkurī, Ibn 'Āmir appointed him governor of Khurāsān. When Ibn al-Kawwā heard about it, he said what he did.

252. Cairo reads: Abū Awfāh.
254. O reads: "of the Arabs."
(According to) 'Umar—'Ali: When Ibn 'Amir was too weak for his job, and the (disruptive) conditions spread in al-Baṣrah, Mu'āwiya wrote to him, asking him to visit. 'Umar (said): Abū al-Hasan told me that that was in this year, and that Ibn 'Amir appointed Qays b. al-Haytham as his deputy over al-Baṣrah. He came to Mu'āwiya, and the latter returned him to the (same) position. When Ibn 'Amir took leave of him, Mu'āwiya told him, "Indeed I would ask three things from you, so say 'they are yours.'" He replied, "They are yours as I am Ibn Umm Ḥakīm." Mu'āwiya said, "Return my position to me and don't be angry." Ibn 'Āmir replied, "I have done so." Mu'āwiya said, "Give me your property at Arafat." Ibn 'Āmir responded as before. Mu'āwiya said, "Give me your houses at Mecca." Ibn 'Āmir answered the same way. Mu'āwiya remarked, "You were attached by kinship." Ibn 'Āmir then said, "O Commander of the Faithful, I ask three things from you, so say 'they are yours.'" Mu'āwiya replied, "They are yours as I am Ibn Hind." Ibn 'Āmir said, "Return my property at Arafat to me." Mu'āwiya replied, "I have done so." Ibn 'Āmir said, "Don't investigate anyone who was an official of mine when I was governor and don't investigate me." Mu'āwiya answered as before. Ibn 'Āmir said, "Marry me to your daughter, Hind." Mu'āwiya replied the same way. It is also said that Mu'āwiya also attached the lineage of Ziyād b. Sumayyah to his own father, Abū Sufyān, as it is said. (According to) 'Umar b. Shabbah: They claimed that a man belonging to the 'Abd al-Qays accompanied Ziyād when he visited Mu'āwiya. The man said to Ziyād, "Indeed, I have influence with Ibn 'Āmir, and if you permit me I would go to him. Ziyād replied, "On condition that you report to me what happens between you and him." When the man agreed to do so, Ziyād gave his permission, and the man went to Ibn 'Āmir who told him, "Hey! Hey! Ibn Sumayyah investigates me and exposes my officials. Indeed, it grieved me to bring witnesses from Qu-
raysh swearing that Abū Sufyān never saw Sumayyah.” When
the man returned, Ziyād questioned him, but he refused to in-
form him. Ziyād didn’t leave him alone until the man in-
formed him.

Ziyād then told Mu‘āwiyah about it, who instructed his
chamberlain (ḥājib), “When Ibn ‘Amir comes, turn the face of
his mount away from the most distant gates.” When the cham-
berlain did so, Ibn ‘Amir came to Yazīd and complained to him
about it. Yazīd asked him, “Did you mention Ziyād?” Ibn
‘Amir replied that he had, whereupon Yazīd rode with him so
that he had him enter. But when Mu‘āwiyah noticed him, he
got up and went inside. Yazīd told Ibn ‘Amir, “Sit here, you
might stay a long time at home away from his audience.” After
a long time, Mu‘āwiyah came out with a stick in his hand with
which he struck the gates while he was quoting:

We have a reputation and you have one too,
which the companions have known.

Then he sat down and said, “O Ibn ‘Amir, you were saying
what you were about Ziyād. Indeed, by God, the Arabs knew
that I was more noble than they during the Jāhiliyyah255 and
that Islam only increased my nobility, and that I was not in-
creased from insignificance by Ziyād and did not become noble
from baseness through him. But I understood his right, so I set
him in his place.” Ibn ‘Amir replied, “O Commander of the
Faithful, we will do what Ziyād likes.” Mu‘āwiyah responded,
“Then we will do what you like.” Ibn ‘Amir then went off to
Ziyād and tried to appease him.

I was told by Aḥmad b. Zuhayr—‘Abd al-Rahmān b.Šālih
—’Amr b. Ḥāshim—‘Umar b. Bashīr256 al-Hamdānī—Abū
Iṣḥāq: When Ziyād came to al-Kūfah, he said, “I have come to
you about a matter for which I sought only you.” They replied,
“Call upon us for whatever you wish.” Ziyād said, “Attach my
lineage to Mu‘āwiyah.” They replied, “As far as false testi-
mony is concerned, no.” He then came to al-Baṣrah and some-
one testified for him.

255. The Jāhiliyyah was the time of lawless ignorance before Islam. See EP,
s.v. Djiāhiliyya.
256. C reads: Bishr.
Mu‘āwiya led the people in the pilgrimage this year. In this year Marwān made the maqṣūrah, and Mu‘āwiya also made one in Syria according to what was reported.

The officials in the provincial capitals during this year were the same officials whom we mentioned for the previous year.

---

257. A maqṣūrah was a protective lodge in the mosque for the ruler or governor during public worship.
Among these events was Mu‘āwiyyah’s appointment of al-Ḥārith b. ‘Abdallāh al-Azdi as governor over al- Başrah. I was told by ’Umar—‘Alī b. Muhammad: Mu‘āwiyyah dismissed Ibn ‘Āmir and made al-Ḥārith b. ‘Abdallāh al-Azdi governor of al- Başrah at the beginning of this year. Al-Ḥārith stayed at al- Başrah four months, then Mu‘āwiyyah dismissed him. He was said to be al-Ḥārith b. ‘Amr and Ibn ‘Abd and Ibn ‘Amr, and he was a Syrian. Mu‘āwiyyah had dismissed Ibn ‘Āmir in order to make Ziyād governor, so he made al-Ḥārith governor as the stalking horse. Al-Ḥārith put ‘Abdallāh b. ‘Amr b. Ghaylān al-Thaqafi in charge of his police. Then Mu‘āwiyyah dismissed al- Ḥārith and put Ziyād in charge of al- Başrah.

Ziyād’s Governorship over al- Başrah

I was told by ’Umar—‘Alī—some knowledgeable people: When Ziyād came to al-Kūfah, al-Mughirah supposed that he came as governor over al-Kūfah. Ziyād stayed in the house of Salmān b.

---

259. C reads: “In this year Mu‘āwiyyah dismissed al-Ḥārith from al- Başrah and made Ziyād governor.”
Rabî‘ah al-Bahili, and al-Mughirah sent Wâ‘il b. Ḥujr al-Ḥaḍramî, Abu Hunaydah to him, saying, “Inform me about him.” Wâ‘il came to Ziyād, but wasn’t able to get anything out of him, so he left for al-Mughirah. He was superstitious, and when he saw a crow cawing, he returned to Ziyād, saying, “O Abū al-Mughirah, this crow urges you to depart from al-Kūfah.” Then he returned to al-Mughirah, and Mu‘āwiyyah’s messenger came to Ziyād that very day (saying), “Go to al-Baṣrah.”


When al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bah was governor over al-Kūfah, he heard that Ziyād expected that his own appointment as governor over al-Kūfah would arrive. So al-Mughirah summoned QAṭan b. ‘Abdallāh al-Ḥārithi, and asked, “Would you be good enough to take care of al-Kūfah for me until I come back to you from the Commander of the Faithful?” He replied, “I am not the one for that.” Al-Mughirah then summoned ‘Uuyaynah b. O b. al-Nahhās al-‘Ijli, and asked him. When he agreed, al-Mughirah went to Mu‘āwiyyah. Upon arriving, he asked Mu‘āwiyyah to dismiss him and grant him settlements at Qargisiyyā between both “backs” of the Qays. When Mu‘āwiyyah heard that, he feared he might revolt and replied, “By God, indeed, you shall certainly return to your office, O Abū ‘Abdallāh.” When Mu‘āwiyyah refused him, al-Mughirah’s suspicion only increased. Mu‘āwiyyah returned him to his office, and he reached us at night while I was on top of the citadel, guarding it. He struck the gate, but we refused to acknowledge him. When he feared that we might drop bricks on him, he told us his name. So I went down to him, welcoming and greeting him, and he quoted:

261. Qargisiyyā was a town on the left bank of the Euphrates just above its confluence with the Khābir River. See EP, s.v. Ḳarkisiyyā.
262. The tribe of Qays’ ‘Aylān had occupied the territory around Qargisiyyā after the Muslim conquest. See EP, s.v. Ḳays ‘Aylān.
Be startled, O Umm 'Amr, by the likes of me, whenever a distant journey is imposed on him.263

"Go to Ibn Sumayyah and make him leave, so that he is beyond the bridge by morning." So we went off264 and brought Ziyād and took him out until we had removed him beyond the bridge before morning came.

I was told by 'Umar—'Ali—Maslamah and al-Hudhali and others: Mu'awiyah appointed Ziyād governor over al-Baṣrah, Khurāsān, and Sijistān. Then he included al-Hind, al-Bahrayn, and 'Uman in his territory. Ziyād arrived at al-Baṣrah at the end of Rabi' II or on the first of Jumādā I 45 (July 20, 665). There was open depravity in al-Baṣrah, so he delivered a "free" (al-batrā') speech (khutbah) in which he did not praise God. It was also said that he praised God, saying:

Praise be to God for His virtues and His goodness, and we ask Him for the utmost of His blessings. O God, since You have provided us with blessings, inspire us with gratitude for your blessing upon us.265 Now then, indeed, the terrible things that the impudent among you commit and in which the wise among you are implicated are extreme ignorance, blind error, and the immorality for the perpetrators of which the eternal fire kindles its blazing flame. The young grow up in them, and the old do not abstain from them, as if you did not hear God's signs266 nor recited the Book of God, nor heard of the generous reward which God reck-

---

263. In Ṭarāfah, Diwān, 154, this line reads:

So know, O Umm 'Amr, that the likes of me, whenever a distant journey is imposed on him...

264. O reads: "I went off."


266. Āy are signs, miracles or tokens, also used of the verses of the Qur'ān.
oned for people who obey Him, and the painful punishment for unending eternity for people who disobey Him. Are you like someone whose eyes have been dazzled by the world, and whose ears have been closed by desires, and who has preferred the transitory over the permanent? Don’t you recall that you have inaugurated misdeeds in Islam that you did not do before, including your abandonment267 of these established brothels, and the weak women snatched in broad daylight, whose number is not few? Are there not censors among you to restrain the seducers from prowling at night and attacking by day? You have advanced kinship and kept religion away. You excuse yourselves inexcusably, and you condone the thief. Every man among you defends on behalf of his fool an act of one who does not fear punishment,268 and does not expect the return [to God]. You are not wise, while you follow the foolish and what you regard as shielding them continues, so that they violate the inviolable of Islam.269 Then they duck behind you as coverts in suspicious hiding places. Food and drink be forbidden to me until I level them to the ground by destruction and burning. Indeed, I think that the end of this business will only be reformed by what was right at first: flexibility270 without weakness and strength without compulsion and violence.271 Indeed, I swear by God that unless you straighten yourselves out for me, I shall certainly take the guardian for the ward,272 the one who stays for the one who leaves, the one who approaches for the one who turns away,273 the healthy for the sick, until anyone among you who meets his brother shall say, “Save yourself

---

267. Jahiz, Bayân, II, 57, inserts: “of the weak to be oppressed and his wealth to be taken.”
268. The text reads: ‘iqāban; C reads: 'āqibatahu, “its consequences.”
269. The text reads: hurrām al-Islāmī; O reads: āurrat al-Muslimūn, “a free woman of the Muslims.”
270. The text reads: līmn; O reads: kays, “intelligence.”
271. The text reads: jābarīyyatun wa 'anfūn; C reads: jābarūtiyyati ‘anfūn, “tyranny of violence.”
272. The text reads: al-walī; Ibn 'Abd Rabbihi, 'Iqd, IV, 111 reads: al-mawla, “the client.”
273. Jahiz, Bayân, II, 58, adds: “the obedient for the disobedient.”
Sa‘d, for Sa‘id has perished!” Indeed, lies from the pulpit remain well-known, so if you catch me in a lie it is permissible for you to disobey me. Whoever among you is burglarized, I will be guarantor for whatever of his was stolen. Beware of night-prowling too, for no prowler will be brought to me but I shall shed his blood. I will postpone this for you for as long as it takes for the news to reach al-Kūfah and return to me. Beware also of the summoning of the Jāhiliyyah, for I shall cut out the tongue of anyone I find appealing to it. You have also invented misdeeds which did not exist [before], and we have invented a punishment for every crime. Whoever drowns folk, I shall drown; whoever burns folk, we shall burn; whoever breaks into a house, I shall break into his heart; and whoever digs up a grave, I shall bury him alive. So spare me your hands and tongues, and I shall spare you my hand and my harm. I shall behead anyone of you who seems contrary to your belief in general. There have been hatreds between me and some folks, but I have put all that behind me. Whoever of you was beneficent, let him increase his beneficence; and whoever was offensive, let him renounce his offense. Indeed, if I should know that one of you was overcome with incurable hatred toward me, I would not expose him nor disclose him unless he shows [it] to me openly. If he does so, I shall not argue with him. So resume your affairs, and help yourselves. Perhaps someone who is worried by our arrival may be pleased, and someone who is pleased with our arrival may be grieved.

O people, we have become your rulers and protectors. We rule you by the authority [sultān] of God, which He

---

275. Jāhiz, Bayān, II, 58, adds: “And if you hear it from me disparage me for it, and know that it is the same with me.
276. C reads: “to Syria and return to al-Baṣrah and to you.”
277. The “summoning of the Jāhiliyyah” was the pre-Islamic custom of calling upon relatives for support or revenge.
279. Lit: “behind my ears and beneath my foot.”
gave us, and protect you with the fay of God, which He bestowed on us. So you owe us obedience in whatever we desire, and we owe you justice in whatever we were assigned. So be worthy of our justice and our fay' by your loyalty. Know also that whatever I may fail to do, I shall not fail to do three [things]: I shall not be unavailable to anyone of you who has a request, even if he comes to me knocking at night; nor delay payment of provisions and stipends; nor prolong your expeditions. So pray to God for the righteousness of your leaders, for they are your rulers. They set the example for you, and [they are] your shelter whence you take refuge. As long as you are righteous, they will be righteous. Do not let your hearts imbibe hatred for them, for your rage will be aggravated and your grief lengthened thereby, and you will not achieve your desire. Even if [your desire] were granted to you, it would be evil for you. I ask God to help everyone for everyone's sake, and if you see me give an order then carry it out literally. I swear by God that I have many [potential] victims among you, so let every man among you beware lest he be among them.

At that, 'Abdallāh b. Ahtam stood up, saying, "O amīr, I testify that you have been granted wisdom and unmistakable judgment." Ziyād responded, "You have lied. That was the prophet of God, David." Al-Aḥnaf said, "You have spoken and did it well, O amīr. But praise comes after performance and commendation after the stipend. We should not praise until we experience." Ziyād replied, "You have spoken the truth." At that Abū Bilāl, Mirdās b. Udayyah, got up mut-
tering and saying, "God imparted differently from what you said. God, Almighty and Great, said, 'And Abraham who fulfilled his mission. One sinner shall not bear the burden of another and a man will only have what he achieved [himself]." So God promised us better than what you did, O Ziyād." Ziyād responded, "Indeed we cannot find a way to what you and your companions want until we plunge into blood for it."

(According to) 'Umar—Khallād b. Yazīd—someone—al-Sha'bi: Every time I heard someone speaking well, I wanted him to be silent for fear that he would spoil it except for Ziyād. For whenever he would continue, his speech was most excellent.

I was told by 'Umar—'Ali—Maslamah: Ziyād appointed 'Abdallah b. Ḥisn to be in charge of his police. He then granted the people a respite until the news reached al-Kūfah and (word of) the arrival of the news at al-Kūfah came back to him. He also used to delay the evening worship so that he was the last to worship. Then he would worship, commanding someone to recite slowly the sūrah of "the Cow" or something similar from the Qur'ān. When he had finished, Ziyād granted a respite for as long as it would take for a man to reach al-Khuraybah. Then he ordered the commander of his police to go forth. So he went forth and killed every man he saw. One night he caught a bedouin and brought him to Ziyād, who asked, "Did you hear the announcement?" He replied, "No, by God, I arrived with my milch-camel, and when the night descended upon me, I lacked a place for her. I waited for morning to come, without knowing what the amir had done." Ziyād declared, "By God, I believe you are telling the truth, but there will be a good example for this community in your death." Then he gave the order and the man was beheaded.

Ziyād was the first one who consolidated the government's

Basrah who had fought at Nahrawān but opposed the use of violence afterwards. He is considered to be one of the first of the inactive Kharijites. See El', s.v. Mirdās b. Udaiyā.

288. Al-Khuraybah was the location of two deserted Persian forts on the outskirts of al-Baṣrah where the original Muslim settlement had been. See Bālahdhuri, Futūḥ, 341, 346.
business and secured the monarchy for Mu'āwiyah. He compelled the people to obey, implemented punishment, unsheathed the sword, arrested on (mere) suspicion, and meted out dubious punishment. The people feared his government greatly so that some of them felt safe with each other. If a man or woman dropped something, no one would touch it until its owner came and picked it up. Women spent the night without locking their doors. He ruled the people with an administration the like of which had never been seen. The people feared him with a dread that they never had of anyone before him. He also lavished stipends and built the provision depot.

When Ziyād heard a sound from the house of 'Umayr, he asked, "What's that?" He was told that it was a watchman, so he said, "Desist from this! I will be guarantor for whatever of his may be lost as far away as Iṣṭakhr." Ziyād also established the police force at four thousand men, headed by 'Abdallāh b. Ḥiṣn, one of the Banū 'Ubayd b. Tha'labah, owner of the Cemetery of Ibn Ḥiṣn, and by al-Ja'd b. Qays al-Tamīmī, the owner of the Arch of al-Ja'd. They were both in charge of his police force together. One day while Ziyād was going along, they both went in front of him with two spears, competing (with each other). Ziyād ordered, "O Ja'd, throw down your spear." So he threw it down, and Ibn Ḥiṣn remained in charge of his police until Ziyād died. It was said that Ziyād put al-Ja'd in charge of dealing with the evil doers, and that he would pursue them.

When Ziyād was told that the roads were dangerous, he said, "My efforts are confined to the city until I prevail over it and reform it. If the city should prevail over me, victory over anything else would be more difficult. When the city has been brought under control, what is outside of it will be tackled." Thus he consolidated his control. He would say, "If a rope should be lost between me and Khurāsān, I would know who took it." He also inscribed five hundred of the Baṣrān shaykhs among his companions, and provided them with three hundred to five hundred dirhams. So Ḥārith b. Badr al-Ghudānī said of him:

Who will tell Ziyād about me?
what a wonderful brother of the Caliph and Amīr!

For you are an imām of justice and aspiration,
and determination when the affairs attend you.

Your brother is the Deputy of God,\textsuperscript{290} son of Ḥarb,
and you his assistant,\textsuperscript{291} what a wonderful assistant!

You obtain what is desired and there comes
To your friend that which the conscience conceals for us.

Victorious by God's command, helping,
when the flock goes astray, you do not oppress.

Plentiful milk streams through your hands
of what they wanted from the world for themselves.

You apportion equally, and neither rich
nor poor complains to you about injustice.

You were energetic, and came at a wicked
time when evils were manifest.

When men divided its desire among themselves,
and the breasts would not disguise their grudges,

And city-dwellers feared and every one in the desert,
remaining out of fear or going.

So when the sword of God arose among them,
Ziyād arose bright, illuminated,

Powerful, not inexperienced among the young,
nor anxious, nor very old.

\textsuperscript{290} Khalifat Allāh.
\textsuperscript{291} Wazīr.
I was told by 'Umar b. Shabbah—‘Ali b. Muḥammad: Ziyād sought help from a number of Companions of the Prophet, among whom were 'Imrān b. al-Ḥusayn al-Khuza‘ī, whom he put in charge of rendering judgment at al-Basrah, al-Ḥakam b. 'Amr al-Ghifārī, whom he put in charge of Khurasan, Samurah b. Jundab, Anas b. Mālik, and 'Abd al-Raḥmān b. Samurah. When 'Imrān asked to resign from his position, Ziyād relieved him and appointed 'Abdallāh b. Ṣaḍālah al-Laythī as judge, then his brother, ‘Aṣim b. Ṣaḍālah, then Zurārah b. Awwār al-Jurashi, whose sister, Lubābah, was with Ziyād. It was also said that Ziyād was the first to have people go in front of him with spears and walk in front of him with clubs. He made use of the guard, a unit of five hundred men, and appointed Shaybān, owner of the Cemetery of Shaybān among the Banū Sa‘d, to be in charge of them. They were stationed at the mosque.

I was told by 'Umar—‘Ali: Ziyād divided Khurasan into four parts and appointed 'Umayr b. Ahmar al-Yashkūrī over Marw, Khulayyīd b. 'Abdallāh al-Ḥanafī over Abrashahr, Qays b. al-Haytham over Marw al-Rūdāh, al-Fāryāb and al-Ṭāliqān, and Nāfī' b. Khālid al-Ṭāḥī over Harāt, Bādhghis, Qādis, and Būshanj.

I was told by 'Umar—‘Ali—Maslamah b. Muḥārib and Ibn Abī 'Amr, Shaykh of the Azd: Ziyād rebuked Nāfī' b. Khālid al-Ṭāḥī, imprisoned him, and made him sign a note for one hundred thousand dirhams—some say, eight hundred thousand. The reason for Ziyād's bad feeling towards him was that Nāfī' had sent him a table with gem-encrusted legs by means of a servant (ghulām) of his, called Zayd, who was Nāfī'’s steward over all his affairs. But Zayd slandered Nāfī', and told Ziyād, "He has cheated you and taken one of the legs of the table, and substituted a leg of gold for it." Some of the leading men of the Azd then went to Ziyād. Among them was Sayf b. Wahb al-Ma’wali, who was noble and about whom the poet says:

Apply to Sayf for generosity and liberality, and apply to Sabrah for the greatest deeds.

292. Sabrah b. Shaymān b. 'Ukayf b. Kuyūm was a leader of the Azd at the Battle of the Camel. See Ibn Durayd, Ishtiqāq, 299.
They entered Ziyād’s presence while he was brushing his teeth, and when Ziyād saw them he quoted:

Recall for us the stopping place of our horses, at the bend, since you are in need of us.

As far as the Azd are concerned, they say, “No, Sayf b. Wahb Abū Ṭalḥah al-Ma’wali quoted that line instead, when he entered Ziyād’s presence.” So Ziyād replied, “Yes.” However, it reminded Ziyād of the time when Ṣabrah had protected him, so he called for the note and erased it with his toothbrush and released Nāfi’.


I was told by ‘Umar—‘Ali—Abū al-Raḥmān al-Thaqāfī and Muḥammad b. Fuḍayl—his father: When Ziyād became governor of Iraq, he appointed al-Ḥakam b. ‘Amr al-Ghifārī as governor over Khūrāsān. He also appointed men along with him over the districts and ordered them to obey al-Ḥakam. They were in charge of collecting the tax revenue. They were Aslam b. Zur-

It is also said that in this year Marwān b. al-Ḥakam led the people in the pilgrimage while he was in charge of al-Madīnah. The previously mentioned governors and officials in charge of the provincial capitals during this year were al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bah in charge of al-Kūfah, while Shurayḥ was in charge of rendering judgment there, and Ziyād in charge of al-Baṣrāh, and the (other) officials whom I have mentioned previously.

During this year ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Khālid b. al-Walīd led the winter raid against Byzantine territory.
Among these events was the winter raid of Mālik b. 'Ubaydallāh against Byzantine territory. According to alternative accounts this raid was led by 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Khālid b. al-Walid or by Mālik b. Hubayrah al-Sakūnī.

During this year, 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Khālid b. al-Walid departed from Byzantine territory to Homs. Ibni Uthāl al-Naṣrānī\(^\text{299}\) is said to have slipped him a poisoned drink, and when he drank it, it killed him.

**The Death of 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Khālid b. al-Walid**

The reason for that was what I was told by 'Umar—'Ali—Maslamah b. Muḥārib: 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Khālid b. al-Walid had become great in Syria and the Syrians favored him because of the reputation among them of his father, Khālid b. al-Walid, and because of his usefulness to the Muslims in Byzantine territory, as well as his bravery. They favored him so much that

\(^{299}\) "The Christian."
Mu‘awiyyah feared him. He was afraid for himself with regard to 'Abd al-Rahmān, because of the affection of the people for him. So he ordered Ibn Uthāl to plot to kill him, and guaranteed to Ibn Uthāl that, if he did so, his tax (kharāj) would be revoked for as long as he lived and that he would be put in charge of the collection of the tax revenues (kharāj) of Homs. As a result, when 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Khālid reached Homs, returning from Byzantine territory, Ibn Uthāl slipped him a poisoned drink with some of his slaves. He drank it and died at Homs. Mu‘awiyyah then fulfilled for Ibn Uthāl what he had guaranteed to him. He put Ibn Uthāl in charge of (collecting) the tax revenues (kharāj) of Homs and revoked his own tax (kharāj). Khālid b. 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Khālid b. al-Walid came to al-Madinah, and one day he sat with ‘Urwah b. al-Zubayr. When Khālid greeted him, ‘Urwah asked him who he was. When he replied, "I am Khālid b. 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Khālid b. al-Walid," ‘Urwah asked him, "What did Ibn Uthāl do?" At that, Khālid got up from his presence and departed, heading for Homs. Then he lay in wait for Ibn Uthāl there. When he saw Ibn Uthāl riding one day, Khālid b. 'Abd al-Rahmān stood in his way and struck him with his sword, killing him. When he was brought to Mu‘awiyyah, the latter imprisoned him for several days and fined him Ibn Uthāl’s blood price, so that no one retaliated against Khālid for killing him. When Khālid returned to al-Madinah, he came to 'Urwah and greeted him. When 'Urwah asked him, "What did Ibn Uthāl do?" he replied, "I took care of Ibn Uthāl for you, but what did Ibn Jurmuẓ do?" At that, 'Urwah became silent. When Khālid b. 'Abd al-Rahmān struck Ibn Uthāl, he said:

I am the descendent of the Sword of God, so know me!

Only my noble descent and my religion last,
And a trenchant sword with which my right hand assailed.

During this year al-Khatīm and Sahm b. Ghālib al-Ḥujaymī rebelled, proclaiming, "Judgment belongs only to God." 300 I was

---

300. The text reads: hakkama, which means "to say the Kharijite slogan, la hukmah illa li-llāhi."
told about their affair by 'Umar—'Ali: When Ziyād became governor, Sahm b. Ghalib al-Hujaymī and al-Khaṭīm, who was Yazīd b. Mālik al-Bāhili, feared him. As for Sahm, he went off to al-Ahwāz and caused mischief, proclaiming, “Judgment belongs only to God.” Then he returned, hid, and sought a guarantee of safe-conduct. Ziyād did not grant him that, but sought him, killed him, and crucified him on his door. As for al-Khaṭīm, Ziyād exiled him to Bahrayn, then he allowed him to come back, saying to him, “Stay in your city.” Ziyād also told Muslim b. 'Amr to vouch for him, but Muslim refused, saying, “If he spends the night away from his house, I shall let you know.” Muslim then came to Ziyād and said, “Al-Khaṭīm did not spend the night in his house.” At that, Ziyād ordered him to be killed and (his corpse) thrown into (the district of) the Bāhilibhilah [tribe].

'Utbah b. Abī Sufyān led the people in the pilgrimage this year. The officials and governors were the same as during the previous year.

301. C reads: “the gate of his kinsmen.”
The winter campaign of Malik b. Hubayrah against Byzantine territory occurred during this year, as well as the winter campaign of Abū 'Abd al-Rahmān al-Qayni against Anṭākiyāh.

In this year also, 'Abdallāh b. 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ was dismissed from (the governorship of) Egypt, and Mu'āwiyyah b. Ḥudayj was put in charge there. According to al-Wāqidi, Mu'āwiyyah b. Ḥudayj set out westward; he was an 'Uthmānī.302 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Abī Bakr, who had come from al-Iskandariyyah, marched past him, saying to him, “O Mu'āwiyyah, indeed, by my life, you took your reward from Mu'āwiyyah. You killed Muḥammad b. Abī Bakr in order to be made governor of Egypt, and you have become its governor.” Mu'āwiyyah b. Ḥudayj replied, “I only killed Muḥammad b. Abī Bakr for what he did to 'Uthmān.” At that 'Abd al-Rahmān replied, “However, if you were seeking [revenge for] the blood of 'Uthmān, you would not have participated in what Mu'āwiyyah did, since 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ

302. An 'Uthmānī was one of those who demanded revenge for the death of 'Uthmān and the punishment of his murderers during the first civil war.
You were the first person to jump up and declare allegiance to Mu‘awiya.

Some of the biographers said that in this year Ziyād sent al-Ḥakam b. ‘Amr al-Ghifārī to Khurāsān as governor. He raided the mountain of al-Ghūr and Farāwandah. He defeated the people there with the sword by force, conquered the territory, and acquired much booty and captives. I shall mention those who differ with this account later if God Most High wills. The one who told this account mentioned that al-Ḥakam b. ‘Amr returned from this raid of his and died at Marw.

There is disagreement over who led the people in the pilgrimage this year. Al-Wāqidi said ‘Utbah b. Abī Sufyān was put in charge of the pilgrimage in this year. Others said the one who led the pilgrimage in this year was ‘Anbasah b. Abī Sufyān. The governors and officials in charge of the provincial capitals were the same as those whom I mentioned for the preceding year.

---

303. This refers to ‘Amr’s deception of Abū Mūsā al-Ash‘ārī during the arbitration at Adhrūh.
The winter campaign of 'Abd al-Rahmān al-Qaynī against Antākiyah occurred during this year, as well as the summer campaign of 'Abdallāh b. Qays al-Fazārī, the sea raid of Mālik b. Hubayrah al-Sakūnī, and the joint sea raid of 'Uqbah b. 'Āmir al-Juhani with the Egyptians and the people of al-Madinah. Al-Mundhir b. al-Zuhayr was in charge of the people of al-Madinah, and Khālid b. 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Khālid b. al-Walid was in charge of them all.

According to some authorities, Ziyād sent Ghālib b. Faḍālah al-Laythi to be in charge of Khurāsān. Ghālib had been a Companion of the Messenger of God.

Marwān b. al-Ḥakam led the people in the pilgrimage this year, according to most biographers. He expected to be dismissed due to Mu‘āwiyyah’s ill will towards him and because Mu‘āwiyyah had taken back Fadak after having granted it to him. The governors of the provincial capitals and their officials during this year were the same as those during the preceding year.
The winter campaign of Malik b. Hubayrah al-Sakūnī into Byzantine territory occurred during this year.

The raid of Faḍālah b. 'Ubayd against Jarabbah also occurred during this year. He spent the winter at Jarabbah, conquered it, and took many captives there.

The summer campaign of 'Abdallāh b. Kurz al-Bajali occurred during this year.

The sea raid of Yazīd b. Shajarah al-Rahwī occurred during this year. He spent the winter with the Syrians.

The sea raid of 'Uqbah b. Nāfī occurred during this year, and he spent the winter with the Egyptians.


In this year Mu‘āwiyah discharged Marwān b. al-Ḥakam from al-Madinah, in the month of Rabī‘ I (April 9–May 8, 669). He appointed Sa‘īd b. al-‘Āṣ as governor over al-Madinah in the month of Rabī‘ II (May 9–June 6, 669)—it is also said, in the
month of Rabi’ I in this year. Altogether, Marwān was Mu‘āwiyyah’s governor of al-Madinah for eight years and two months. When Marwān was dismissed, ‘Abdallāh b. al-Ḥārith b. Nawfal was in charge of rendering judgment at al-Madinah for him—that is what al-Wāqidī claims. When Sa‘īd b. al-‘Āṣ was put in charge, he dismissed ‘Abdallāh from that post and appointed Abū Salimah b. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Awf as judge.

It was said that in this year the plague struck al-Kūfah. Al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bah fled the plague, and when it lifted, he was asked, “Why don’t you return to al-Kūfah?” So he went back and was stricken and died. It has also been said that al-Mughirah died in the year 50(670/671). Mu‘āwiyyah added al-Kūfah to Ziyad’s (territory). He was thus the first one to have al-Kūfah and al-Baṣrah combined (under his jurisdiction).

In this year Sa‘īd b. al-‘Āṣ led the people in the pilgrimage. The governors and officials during this year were the same as those during the previous year, except for the governor of al-Kūfah. There are differences regarding the date of al-Mughirah’s death, for some biographers said he perished in this year while others said it was in the following year.

304. According to Ibn Khayyat, Ta’rikh, I, 245, this happened in the year 48(668/9)
The Events of the Year

50

(JANUARY 29, 670-JANUARY 17, 671)

The raid of Busr b. Abī Arṭāt and Sufyān b. Awf al-Azdi in Byzantine territory occurred during this year. It was also said that the sea raid of Faḍālah b. 'Ubayd al-Anṣārī took place during this year.

The death of al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bāh occurred in this year according to al-Wāqīḍī and al-Madā‘īnī. (According to) Muḥammad b. ‘Umar—Muḥammad b. Mūsā al-Thaqafī—his father: Al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bāh was a tall man with an injured eye which had been wounded at Yarmūk. He died in (the month of) Sha‘bān (August 24–September 21, 670), at the age of seventy. As for ‘Awānah, he said: According to what I was told by Hishām b. ‘Ubayd, al-Mughirah perished in the year 49(669/670). Others said: No, he perished in the year 51(671/672). I was told by ‘Umar b. Shabbāh—‘Ali b. Muḥammad: Ziyād was in charge of al-Baṣrah and its districts until this year. When al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bāh died at al-Kūfah while he was its

305. The decisive battle in the Muslim conquest of Syria was fought at Yarmūk, in northern Jordan, in Rajab 15 (August 636). See EI', s.v. al-Yarmūk.
306. C and Cairo read: Muḥammad.
The Events of the Year 50

The Events of the Year 50

The governor, Mu'āwiyah wrote to Ziyād assigning him to be in charge of al-Kūfah and al- Başrah. He was the first one to have al-Kūfah and al- Başrah combined [under his jurisdiction]. Ziyād appointed Samurah b. Jundab as his deputy over al- Başrah and set out for al-Kūfah. Ziyād would stay in al-Kūfah for six months and in al- Başrah for six months.

I was told by 'Umar—'Ali—Maslamah b. Muḥārib: When al-Mughirah died, Iraq was combined under Ziyād's jurisdiction, so he came to al-Kūfah, ascended the pulpit, praised and glorified God, and then said, "Indeed, when that matter came to me while I was at al-Barah, I wanted to set out for you with two thousand of the police force of al- Başrah. Then, when I remembered that you are people of truth, and that your truth often rejected the false, I came to you with my family. God be praised, Who removed from me what the people imposed and preserved for me what they lost . . . " until he finished the speech. When he was pelted with pebbles on the pulpit, he sat down until they ceased. Then he summoned some of his henchmen and commanded them to seize the gates of the mosque. He then said, "Let every man of you take the one sitting next to him, and do not say, 'I don't know who was sitting next to me.'" He then ordered a seat to be put at the gate of the mosque for him, and summoned them, four at a time, to swear by God, "None of us threw pebbles at you." He freed whoever swore and arrested and set aside whoever did not swear until there were thirty men—it is also said, eighty. He then cut off their hands on the spot. Al-Sha'ibi said: By God, we never accused him of lying. Whenever he promised us good or evil, he carried it out.

I was told by 'Umar—'Ali—Salamah b. 'Uthman—al-Sha'bi: The first man Ziyād killed at al-Kūfah was Awfā b. Ḫiṣn. Ziyād had heard something about him, but when he sought him, he fled. When Ziyād inspected the people, Awfā marched past him. Ziyād asked, "Who is this?" When he was told that he was Awfā b. Ḫiṣn, Ziyād quoted, "His feet brought misery." At that Awfā recited:

307. A kursi was a chair, throne, or judgment seat.
Indeed, Ziyād, Abū al-Mughirah, does not hurry, while the people have haste.

I feared you, by God, so know my oath, fear of the serpents, the attack of the vipers.

You came when the land was confined, so there was no refuge upon it for someone fearful.

Ziyād asked, "What is your opinion about 'Uthmān?" Awfā replied, "Husband of two daughters of the Messenger of God. I have not disowned him. That is my general opinion." Ziyād continued, "What, then, do you say about Mu'āwiya?" Awfā answered, "Generous, forbearing." Ziyād then asked, "And what do you say about me?" Awfā responded, "I heard that you said in al-Baṣrah, 'I shall certainly seize the healthy for the sick and the one who comes for the one who turns away.'" Ziyād replied, "That's true." Awfā said, "You acted arbitrarily." Ziyād retorted, "The braggart is nothing but an evil flute," and killed him. At that, 'Abdallāh b. Hammām al-Salūlī said:

God thwarted the effort of Awfā b. Hiṣn, when he became the sorcerer's chicken.

Destruction and misery led him to a lion of a thicket and a deaf viper.

When Ziyād came to al-Kūfah, 'Umārah b. Uqbah b. Abī Mu'ayyāt came to him saying, "'Amr b. al-Ḥamīq is assembling some of the faction of Abū Turāb." 'Amr b. Ḥurayth asked him, "What leads you to report what you are not certain about and do not know what the result might be?" Ziyād then said "Both of you are wrong to talk with me about this openly,

This proverb is ascribed to al-Ḥārith b. Jabalah al-Ghassānī who said it to al-Ḥārith b. Ayyāf al-Abīdī who had satirized him, when the latter was brought captive to him. It is also ascribed to 'Ubayd b. al-Abraṣ who said it to al-Nu'mān b. al-Mundhir.

309. Al-hafāfith, pl. of hufath: a large, mottled, red snake with a great head.
310. Lit. "You flailed about in the dark."
while 'Amr would refute what you say. Both of you go to 'Amr b. al-Ḥamiq and say to him, "What is this group that you assemble? If anyone wants to speak with you, or you with him, do so in the mosque." 'Amr b. al-Ḥamiq is also said to have been accused of that by Yazid b. Ruwaym who told Ziyād, "'Amr has made both cities fester." At that, 'Amr b. al-Ḥurayth remarked, "Yazid has never been occupied with anything useful at any given time." Ziyād then told Yazid b. Ruwaym, "As for you, you would have allowed 'Amr b. al-Ḥamiq's blood to be shed; and as for 'Amr [b. al-Ḥurayth], you would have spared his blood. Even if I knew that the marrow of his leg had liquified out of hatred for me, I would not be furious with him until he should rebel against me." Ziyād also made use of the maqṣūrah[90] when the people of al-Kūfah pelted him with pebbles. When Ziyād set out from al-Basrah for al-Kūfah, he put Samurah b. Jundab in charge [of al-Basrah].

I was told by 'Umar—Išāq b. Idrīs[91]—Muḥammad b. Sulaym: I asked Anas b. Sirin if Samurah b. Jundab had killed anyone. He replied, "Can those whom Samurah b. Jundab killed be counted? Ziyād made him deputy over al-Basrah and came to al-Kūfah. When he returned, Samurah had killed eight thousand people. Ziyād asked him, 'Aren't you afraid that you might have killed someone who was innocent?' Samurah replied, 'Even if I should kill as many more of them, I would not fear [it],' or words to that effect."

I was told by 'Umar—Mūsā b. Ismā'īl—Nūḥ b. Qays—Ash'ath al-Huddānī—Abū Sawwār al-ʿAdawi: On one morning Samurah killed forty—seven men of my folk who had collected the Qurān.

I was told by 'Umar—'Alī b. Muḥammad—Jaʿfar al-Saḍafi—A_wf: Samurah approached from al-Madīnah. When he was at the dwellings of the Banū Asad, a man went out from one of their alleys, and suddenly attacked the first cavalry. Someone among the folk then attacked the man, piercing him with a spear. The cavalry then advanced, and Samurah b. Jundab came upon the man as he lay wallowing in his blood. Sa-

---

312. See above, n. 257.
313. O reads: Uways.
murah asked, "Who is this?" and was told, "The first cavalry of the amir struck him." Samurah remarked, "If you hear that we have ridden, avoid our spearheads."

I was told by 'Umar—Zuhayr b. Ḥarb—Wahb b. Jarīr—Ghassān b. Muḍār—Saʿīd b. Zayd: Qarīb and Zuhḥāf rebelled while Ziyād was at al-Kūfah and Samurah at al- Баşrah. We went out by night and camped with the Banū Yashkur, who were seventy men—that was in Ramaḍān (September 22—October 21, 670). They then came to the Banū Ḍubay’ah, who were seventy men. As they went past one of their shaykhs called Ḥakkāk, he saw them and said, "Welcome to Abū al-Sha’thā." They thought that the shaykh was Ibn Ḥiṣn, so they killed him and dispersed among the places of worship belonging to the Azd. A group of them came to the plaza (raḥbah) of the Banū ‘Āli, and another of the Mosque of al-Mu‘adil. At that, Sayf b. Wahb went forth against them with his friends and killed whomever came his way. Youths of the Banū ‘Āli and of the Banū Rāṣib also went forth against Qarīb and Zuhḥāf, shooting arrows at them. Qarīb asked, "Is ‘Abdallah b. Aws al-Tahi among the folk?" while he was contending with him. Upon being told that he was, Qarīb exclaimed, "Onward, then, to the contest!" ‘Abdallah then killed him and brought (back) his head. Ziyād arrived from al-Kūfah, and began to rebuke him, saying, "O best of the Tahis, if you had not succeeded against the folk, I would have removed you to the prison." Qarīb belonged to the Iyāḍ and Zuhḥāf to the Tayyi', and they were cousins. They were both the first ones to rebel after the people of al-Nahr. Ghassān said: I heard Saʿīd saying that Abū Bilāl said, "God did not bring Qarīb close." I swear by God that I would rather fall from the sky than do what he did," (that is, act ruthlessly).

I was told by 'Umar—Zuhayr—Wahb—his father: Ziyād treated the Ḥarūriyyah more harshly after Qarīb and Zuhḥāf. He killed them and ordered Samurah to do the same. Ziyād would

---

314. Cairo: "they both," would seem to be the preferred reading.
315. Abū al-Sha’thā means "one with matted or disheveled hair."
316. That is, the commander of Ziyād's police force.
317. Qarīb means "close" or "near."
318. According to Ibn al-Khayyāt, Ta’rikh, I, 260–64, these events occurred in the year 53(672/3).
appoint Samurah deputy over al-Baṣrah whenever he went to al-Kūfah. So Samurah killed many of them. I was told by 'Umar—Abū 'Ubaydah: At that time Ziyād spoke from the pulpit, "O people of al-Baṣrah, By God, take care of these for me or I shall certainly start with you. By God, if a single man of them escapes, you won't get one dirham of your stipends for the [entire] year." So the people rose up against them and killed them.

[According to] Muhammad b. 'Umar: In this year Mu'āwiyah ordered319 that the pulpit of the Messenger of God be transported320 to Syria. When it was moved, the sun was eclipsed so that the stars were seen plainly that day. When the people considered that to be very momentous, Mu'āwiyah said, "I didn't want to move it; rather, I feared that it would have become wormy, so I paid attention to it." Then he draped it that day. Muhammad b. 'Umar also mentioned that Khalid b. al-Qāsim told him that, according to Shu'ayb b. 'Amr al-Umawi.

(I was told by) Muḥammad b. 'Umar—Yahyā b. Sa'īd b. Dinār—his father: Mu'āwiyah said, "Indeed, I thought that the pulpit and staff of the Messenger of God should not be left at al-Madīnah because [its people] were the enemies and murderers of the Commander of the Faithful, 'Uthmān," When Mu'āwiyah arrived, he looked for the staff, and Sa'd al-Qaraz had it. Abū Hurayrah and Jābir b. 'Abdallāh then came to him, saying, "O Commander of the Faithful, we remind you of God, Almighty and Great. Do not do this. For it is not right for the pulpit of the Messenger of God to be removed from the place where he put it, nor for his staff to be removed to Syria. Would you remove the mosque!" At that, Mu'āwiyah refrained and added six steps to the pulpit. As a result, today it has eight steps.321 He also apologized to the people for what he did.


319. O reads: "wanted to pull up the pulpit."
320. C reads: "and transport it."
321. See also Mas'ūdī, Murūj, V, 66.
322. C reads: Mūsā.
323. 'Abd al-Malik was Caliph from 65[685] until 86 [705]. See EI², s.v. 'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān.
pulpit. So Qabiṣah b. Dhu‘ayb said to him, “I remind you of God, Almighty and Great, [warning] not to do this and not to transfer it. Indeed, when the Commander of the Faithful, Mu‘awiya, moved it, the sun was eclipsed. The Messenger of God said, ‘Whoever swears an oath upon my pulpit sinfully, his resting place shall be in the fire.’ You would remove it from al-Madinah while it is part of the rights among the people at al-Madinah.” As a result, ‘Abd al-Malik refrained from that and abstained from mentioning it. When al-Walid was (ruler) and made the pilgrimage, he was interested in that, saying, “Tell me about it. I certainly think that I shall do [it].” Sa‘îd b. al-Musayyib then sent to ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Aziz, saying, “Tell your master, ‘Fear God, Almighty and Great, and don’t be exposed to God, to whom be praise, nor to His wrath.’” When ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Aziz spoke to him, al-Walid refrained and abstained from mentioning it. When Sulaymân b. ‘Abd al-Malik made the pilgrimage, ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al-‘Aziz informed him about what al-Walid had been interested in and the message Sa‘îd b. al-Musayyib had sent to him. At that, Sulaymân remarked, “I did not like for that to be mentioned about ‘Abd al-Malik or about al-Walid. This is arrogance, and is not for us or for this pulpit. We took over the world, and it is in our hands, and we want to support one of the symbols of Islam sent to it by transporting it to our presence. This is not righteous.”

In this year Mu‘awiya b. Hudayj was dismissed from Egypt and Ifriqiyyah. Mu‘awiya b. Abi Sufyan had sent ‘Uqbah b. Nâfi’ al-Fihri to Ifriqiyyah before he put Maslamah in charge of Egypt and Ifriqiyyah. ‘Uqbah conquered Ifriqiyyah and laid out is (city of) Qayrawân. Muhammad b. ‘Umar claimed that its location, a thicket, was undesirable because of beasts of prey
and snakes and other kinds of animals. When God, Almighty and Great, summoned them, none of them remained but they all fled as the beasts of prey carried off their cubs. (According to) Muhammad b. 'Umar—Mūsā b. 'Āli—his father: 'Uqbah b. Nāfi' announced, "Indeed when we settled they departed, blaming us, and went out fleeing from their dens."

I was told by al-Mufaddil b. Faḍālah—Zayd b. Abī Ḥabīb—a man from the Egyptian army: We arrived with 'Uqbah b. Nāfi' who was the first person to lay out (the city). He divided it up into dwellings and houses for the people, and built its mosque. We stayed with him until he was dismissed. He was the best of governors and the best commander.

Then in this year, Mu‘āwiyah dismissed Mu‘āwiyah b. Ḥudayj from Egypt and 'Uqbah b. Nāfi' from Ifriqiyyah, and he put Maslamah b. Mukhallad in charge of all of Egypt and the West. He was the first one for whom the entire West, Egypt, Barqah, Ifriqiyyah, and Tarābulus were combined. Maslamah b. Mukhallad put a mawla of his called al-Muhājir in charge of Ifriqiyyah, dismissed 'Uqbah b. Nāfi', and removed him from affairs of government. Maslamah remained as governor over Egypt and the West, while Abū al-Muhājir was in charge of Ifriqiyyah on his behalf, until Mu‘āwiyah b. Abī Sufyān died.

In this year Abū Mūsā al-Ash‘arī died. It has also been said that the death of Abū Mūsā occurred in the year 52(672)

There is a difference of opinion about who led the people in the pilgrimage this year. Some people said Mu‘āwiyah led them in pilgrimage. Others said his son Yazid led them in the pilgrimage. In this year the governor of al-Madīnah was Sa‘īd b. al-‘Āsh, while Ziyād was in charge of al- Баṣrāh, al-Kūfah, the East, Sijsīṭān, al-Sind, and al-Hind.

In this year Ziyād sought al-Farazdaq,⁴⁳ while the Banū Nahshāl and Fuqaym incited (Ziyād) against him. As a result, al-Farazdaq fled from Ziyād to Sa‘īd b. al-‘Āš, who was then governor of al-Madīnah for Mu‘āwiyah. He sought refuge with Sa‘īd, and the latter granted him asylum.

---

⁴³ Al-Farazdaq, "the lump of dough", was the famous poet, Hammām b. Ghālib who died ca. 110(728) or 112(730) See El², s.v. al-Farazdaḵ.
Al-Farazdaq's Flight from Ziyād

I was told by 'Umar b. Shabbah—Abū 'Ubaydah and Abū al-Ḥasan al-Madā'ini and others: When al-Farazdaq satirized the Banū Nahshal and the Banū Fuqaym ... Abū Zayd did not add to the chain of authorities (iṣnād) of his report more than I have mentioned. As for Muhammad b. 'Ali, he told me according to Muḥammad b. Sa‘d330—Abū 'Ubaydah—A‘yān b. Labatah b. al-Farazdaq—his father—his father: When I satirized al-Ashhab b. Rumaylah and al-Ba‘ith they were both disgraced. The Banū Nahshal and the Banū Fuqaym incited Ziyād b. Abī Suḥyān against me. Others claimed that Yazid b. Maṣ‘ūd b. Khālid b. Mālik b. Rib‘i b. Salmā b. Jandal b. Nahshal also incited against him. A‘yān said: Ziyād did not recognize (who al-Farazdaq was) until he was told, “The bedouin youth who clutched his coin,331 and threw off his clothing.”

[According to] Abū 'Ubaydah—A‘yān b. Labatah—his father—his father: My father, Ghalib, sent me with his caravan and merchandise in order to sell it and purchase items for him and to buy clothing for his family. Upon arriving at al-Baṣrah, I sold the merchandise, took the money it brought, and put it inside my clothes, holding on to it. Then a man confronted me who seemed to me like a devil. When he remarked, “How often you check it,” I responded, “And what prevents me?” He replied, “Now then, if it were someone else I knew, he would not keep it.” At that, I asked, “And who is he?” He replied, “Ghālib b. Sa‘ṣa‘ah.” So I summoned the people of the Mirbad,332 and saying “Take it!” I scattered the money upon them. When someone said, “Cast off your robe, O son of Ghalib,” I cast it off. When another said, “Cast off your shirt,” I cast that off. Yet another said, “Cast off your turban.” So I cast that off until I was left in underwear. But when they said, “Cast off your underwear,” I replied, “I shall not cast it off and go naked. I am not insane.” When the news reached Ziyād, he sent cavalry to the Mirbad to bring me to him. But a man of the Banū al-

332. The Mirbad was an open space in al-Baṣrah used as a market-place.
Hujaym came on horseback, saying, "They are coming for you. To the rescue!" He mounted me behind him, and galloped off until we escaped. When the cavalry arrived, I had already left.

Ziyād then took my two uncles, Dhu haylā and al-Zuḥḥāf, the sons of Saʿṣaʿah, who were registered in the diwān for two thousand dirhams apiece. Since they were there, he imprisoned them. I sent word to them both, "If you wish, I would come to you." But they both replied, "Don't come near us. Indeed, this is Ziyād. What might he do to us, although we have not committed any crime?" They both stayed several days. Then some people interceded with Ziyād, saying, "These are two attentive and obedient shaykhs who have committed no crime except for what a bedouin youth belonging to the desert people did."

At that, Ziyād released them, and they both said to me, "Inform us about your entire business for your father—provisions or clothing?" I then told them both everything. They bought it, and I went off to Ghālib, bringing everything with me. When I came to him, the news about me had already reached him. When he asked me, "How did you do?" I told him what had happened. He remarked, "Indeed you did well." And he rubbed my head.

At that time al-Farazdaq was not composing poetry, but he composed poetry afterwards. Ziyād thus harbored that (escape) against him.

Then al-Aḥnāf b. Qays, Jāriyah b. Qudāmah of the Banū Rabīʿah b. Kaʿb b. Saʿd, al-Jawn b. Qatādah al-ʿAbshami,334 and al-Ḥutāt b. Yazīd Abū Munāzil one of the Banū Ḥuwayyān b. Muhjashiʾ travelled to visit Muʿāwiya b. Ali Sufyān. He assigned each of them stipends of one hundred thousand dirhams, while he assigned al-Ḥutāt a stipend of seventy thousand. When they were on the road, they questioned each other and told about their stipends. Since al-Ḥutāt had received only seventy thousand, he returned to Muʿāwiya. When the latter asked him, "What brought you back, O Abū Munāzil?" he re-

333. O reads: Zunbil.
335. C reads: Jawn. For al-Ḥutāt b. Yazīd see Ibn al-Athir, Usd, I, 379, which has a version of this account explaining that al-Aḥnāf and Jāriyah had been supporters of ʿAli.
plied, “You have disgraced me among the Banū Tamīm. Is not my lineage sound? Am I not old? Am I not obeyed by my clan?” When Muʿāwiyah replied that he was, he asked, “Why then did you belittle me before the folk?” Muʿāwiyah explained. “Indeed I purchased their faith from the folk and entrusted you with your faith and your views about ʿUthmān b. ʿAffān”—al-Ḥutāt was an ʿUthmānī. At that he said, “Me, too; purchase my faith from me.” So Muʿāwiyah ordered the full stipend of the folk for him. But al-Ḥutāt disparaged his stipend, so Muʿāwiyah withheld it. Al-Farazdaq then said about that:

Both your father and my uncle, O Muʿāwiyah, bequeathed an inheritance. So his relatives own the inheritance.  

Why did you take the legacy of al-Ḥutāt, while the liquidity of Ḥarb’s legacy is frozen for you?  

For if this matter had happened during the Jāhiliyyah,  
You would have known whose auxiliary cavalry is insignificant.  

And if it was during [the time of] faith [something] like this would be hateful to you.  
We have our rightful possession, or he choked on the water he drank.  

And if it happened when we were [there], while the hand was generous,  
a sharp [sword] would determine its blow, penetrating you. 

(Muḥammad b. ʿAlī recited: While there was abundance in the palm of the hand.)

---

336. Other versions of this poem are in Boucher, Divan, III, 139; Bevan, Nakāʾid, 608–9; Isfahānī, Aghānī, XIX, 37; ʿĀwī, Sharh, 56–7. The first eight lines are quoted by Ibn al-Athir, Usd, I, 379.  
337. Boucher, Divan reads: “relatives are the first to inherit.”  
339. Boucher, Divan reads: “And if this matter happened in someone else’s kingdom, you would fulfill it.”  
340. See Maydānī, Amthāl, II, 429; Freytag, Proverbia, II, 943: “He eats an elephant and chokes on an insect,” said of someone who tries to avoid lying.  
341. O reads: “something pleasant.”
You were hurled at something, O Mu'āwiya, before which are huge chasms whose steepness is difficult,

While I did not give\textsuperscript{342} half\textsuperscript{343} from powerlessness except yourself. Even if his squadrons were hostile to me,

Am I not the most respected of people with regard to relatives and clan?

and more forbidding than they towards neighbors when his side is wronged?

And no [woman] bore after the Prophet and his family the likes of me, a stallion among men resembling him.

My father is Ghālib, and the man is a confidant whose descent is traced to Ṣa'ṣa'ah,\textsuperscript{344} so who is there related to him?\textsuperscript{345}

The courtyard of my house is beside the Pleiades, and before it the full moon passing among its stars.\textsuperscript{346}

My ancestors are stoney\textsuperscript{347} mountains, as many as pebbles, and my lineage is the lineage of generosity, so who would call it to account?

I am the son of one who gives life to the \textit{wa'īd}\textsuperscript{348} and a guarantor against fate when its profits were difficult.

\textsuperscript{342} Boucher, \textit{Divan} reads: "was not given."

\textsuperscript{343} That is, submission and obedience to the government. See Ṣāwī, \textit{Sharḥ}, 57.

\textsuperscript{344} Bevan, \textit{Nakā'id}, 609 reads:

\begin{quote}
My forefather is Ghālib and the man Ṣa'ṣa'ah who traces his descent to Dārim.
\end{quote}

Dārim b. Mālik b. Ḥānẓalah was one of the main tribal divisions of Tamīm.

\textsuperscript{345} The previous four lines are in the \textit{Nakā'id} but not in the \textit{Divan}.

\textsuperscript{346} This line occurs in the \textit{Divān} after the following line as:

The courtyard of my house is spacious. . . .

\textsuperscript{347} Bevan, \textit{Nakā'id} reads: "lofty."

\textsuperscript{348} A \textit{wa'īd} is an unwanted child condemned to be buried alive.
How many forefathers I have, O Mu‘awiyah, who are still more illustrious; what his side turns away competes with the wind.

The branches of the two Mālikṣ augmented him, and your father, who was from ‘Abd al-Shams, does not resemble him.

You see him as the blade of the sword shaking for generosity, noble, achieving glory, when his mustache sprouted,

Long of sword-belt, since he was,
Quṣayy and ‘Abd al-Shams are not among those who address him.


Ibn Sa‘d said: Abū ‘Ubaydah and Abū Mūsā al-Faḍl b. Mūsā b. Khuṣaylah told me: When Ziyād drove out al-Farazdaq, the latter came at night to my uncle, ‘Isā b. Khuṣaylah, saying, “O Abū Khuṣaylah, indeed this man has frightened me, and my friend and everyone in whom I was placing my hopes have rejected me. I have come to you to hide.” Abū Khuṣaylah welcomed him, and al-Farazdaq stayed with him for three nights. Then al-Farazdaq told him, “It seems to me that I should go to Syria.” Abū Khuṣaylah replied, “You are welcome to stay with me for as long as you like, and if you should depart, this Arhabiyyah354 she-camel is yours.” So he rode off after a night, and

349. The text reads: agharra, lit. a horse with a blaze on its forehead, bright, esteemed.
351. Boucher, Divan reads: “is not on speaking terms with him.”
353. This line is in the Naka‘īd but not in the Divan.
354. The Arhabiyyah was a breed of fast she-camel named after the Banū Ar-
The Events of the Year 50

'Isā sent someone with him until he got beyond the houses. By morning he had gone more than a three-nights' journey. Al-Farazdaq said about that:

Al-Bahzi bestowed a mount on me, no matter who disapproved of the people, and the crimes of the criminal are feared.

And who, O 'Isā, would blame his guest?
Your guest is well-treated, his food delicious.

He said, "Know that she is an Arhabiyyah and that she is at your disposal for your night journey."

When morning came I put al-Mulqā and Hanbal behind me. She did not go forth until its darkness lifted [from] the star.

She moves away from the people of al-Hufayr as if she were a male ostrich whose female ostriches compete during the darkness of night.

She saw Duwayyah before her eyes and the dawn appeared for her [leaving] from smooth peaked Sa'il.

---

355. Other versions of this poem are in Boucher, Divan, III, 87; Bevan, Nakā'īd; II, 610; Iṣfahānī, Aghānī, XIX, 30–1; and Sāwī, Sharḥ, 763–4.
356. Bevan, Nakā'īd; Boucher, Divan read: "satisfied" or "protected."
357. Boucher, Divan reads: "all together."
358. This line is in the Nakā'īd but not in the Divan.
359. This is the second line in the Divan.
360. Hanbal was a marsh or meadow in the territory of the Banū Tamim. See Yāqūt, Mu'jam, III, 350.
361. That is, until the star rose from its darkness. The Nakā'īd and the Divan have "the night" instead of "the star." This the eleventh line in the Divan.
362. Al-Hufayr was the first stop on the road from al-Baṣrah to Mecca. "She" is the riding camel. This is the eighth line in the Divan.
363. Bevan, Nakā'īd; Boucher, Divan read: Ruwayyah. The latter was a hill near Hanbal.
364. This is the twelfth line in the Divan.
As a sail which has the stream of her halter
on the Tigris [Dijlah] except [for] its nose and the corners
of its mouth.365

When you went past al-Ghariyyān,366 then be safe,
and the ravines of Falj turned away behind me.

He also said:

The means of 'Isā saved me from ruin,
and whoever's protector he is, is not alone.367

It is a long qaṣīdah.

When Ziyād heard that al-Farazdaq had left, he sent 'Ali b.
Zahdam, one of the Banū Nawlah368 b. Fuqaym, in search of
woman called Bint Marrār of the Banū Qays b. Tha'labah who
dwelt in Qasimāh Kāzimah.369 She pulled him out through a
crack in her house and 'Alī was unable to catch him. Al-
Farazdaq said about that:370

I came to the daughter of al-Marrār, who took the opportunity
to desire.
and the likes of me is not desired below stairs.371

365. Boucher, Divan reads:
As if a neck, her halter doubled on it,
from al-Sāi, if not her nose and its throats.

366. Bevan, Nakā'id reads: "When I passed beyond al-Ghariyyān," Boucher,
Divan reads: "When al-Furayyān came before me." Al-Furayyān was a moun-
tain in the territory of the Banū Asad between al-Nibāj and al-Nakrah. This is
the thirteenth line in the Divan.
367. Sāwi, Sharī' reads: "Al-Bahzi bestowed her on me, myself his ransom."
This is also in Bevan, Nakā'id, 610.
369. Bevan, Nakā'id reads: Quṣaybah. Qaṣīmāh Kāzimah was on the Gulf
cost below al- Bsrah. A qaṣīmāh is a tract of sand covered with small shrubs.
370. These lines are also in Bevan, Nakā'id, 611, and Boucher, Divan, 66.
371. Bevan, Nakā'id, 611 reads:
You refused the daughter of al-Marrār, who ripped up in order to desire,
And the likes of me is not desired behind the barn,
But my desire, if you wish our meeting is
the vast expanse of the deserts, not desire for jungles.

She is said to have been Rabī‘ah bt. al-Marrār b. Salāmah al-‘Ijli, the mother of Abū al-Najm al-Rājiz.

[According to] Abū ‘Ubaydah—Misma’ b. ‘Abd al-Mālik: Al-Farazdaq reached al-Rawḥā and settled among the Bakr b. Wā‘il and was safe. He thus said, eulogizing them:

When she compared whither to journey, she did not find for her rising up [anyone] like the tribe of Bakr b. Wā‘il,

More virtuous and more faithful towards an obligation which they contract,

when the top of the summits balanced the upper backs.

It is a long qaṣīdah. He also eulogized them in other qaṣīdahs.

Al-Farazdaq would live in al-Kūfah when Ziyād lived in al-BAṣrah, and when Ziyād lived in al-Kūfah, al-Farazdaq would live in al-BAṣrah. Ziyād would live in al-BAṣrah for six months and in al-Kūfah for six months, When Ziyād learned about what al-Farazdaq did, he wrote to his official in charge of al-Kūfah, ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. ‘Ubayd, “Al-Farazdaq is a wild male beast grazing in the wastelands. When people come upon him, he becomes frightened and leaves them for other territory, where he pastures. So seek him until you seize him.”

---

Boucher, Divan, 66 reads:

You came to the daughter of al-Marrār, who tears off her veil,
and the likes of me is not desired beneath the cushions [or trees].

373. Boucher, Divan reads: “wide.”
374. Bevan, Nakā‘id; Boucher, Divan read: “hiding.”
375. Al-Rawḥā is said to be a place between al-Madīnah and Mecca. See Yāqūt, Mu‘jam, II, 828–9.
376. These lines are also in Bevan, Nakā‘id, 612, and Iṣfahānī, Aghānī, XIX, 31–2.
377. Bevan, Nakā‘id reads: “She had been inclined between the departure.”
378. Bevan, Nakā‘id reads: “for her private parts.”
379. Explained in Bevan, Nakā‘id: “The humps became like the withers from drought and sparse pasture.”
Al-Farazdaq said: I was sought most diligently so that those who used to shelter me began to turn me out of their homes. As a result, the land was restricted for me. While I had my head wrapped up in my garment upon the road, whoever came in search of me passed me by.

When it was night, I came to some of my uncles belonging to the Banū Dabbah while they were celebrating a wedding. I had not tasted food before that. When I said I came for their (wedding feast), I got some food. But while I was sitting, I noticed someone leading a horse, and the tip of a spear had gone through the doorway of the house and was entering where we were. My hosts went up to a reed wall, lifted it up, and I went out under it. Then they said, "We didn’t see him." After they searched for a while, the searchers left. When it was morning my relatives came to me, saying, "Leave for the Ḥijāz, out of Ziyād’s reach, so he won’t seize you. For if he had seized you last night, you would have destroyed us." They collected the price of two female riding camels, and spoke for me to Muqā’is, one of the Banū Taym Allāh b. Tha’labah who was a guide who conveyed merchants.

We then went out to Bāniqyā until we reached one of the inhabited fortresses. Since the gate was not opened for us, as it was a moonlit night, we threw down our saddlebags beside the wall. I asked, "O Muqā’is, do you think that if Ziyād should send men after we reach al-‘Atiq, that they would overpower us?" He replied, "Yes, they are watching for us, but they would not be going beyond al-‘Atiq"—the latter was a defensive fortification (khandaq) which had belonged to the Persians.380 I asked, "What do people say?" He replied, "They say, ‘Give him a respite of a day and a night, then take him,’ so set out." He added, "Indeed, I fear the lions." At that, I responded, "Lions are easier than Ziyād."

We then set out and left behind anything we saw, while a figure accompanied us without leaving us. I said, "O Muqā’is, do

---

380. It was part of the Khandaq Sābūr. See Ţabari, Tūrząkh, l, 2286; Ibn Rustah, A’lāq, 107–8; Bakri, Mu’jam, 914; Yāqūt, Mu’jam, ll, 476; Musil, The Middle Euphrates, 111, 347–8; Nyberg, "Die sassanidische Westgrenze," 318; Frye, "The Sasanian System of Walls for Defense." 8–11.
you see this figure? We leave behind everything else we pass, but indeed this figure has been keeping up with us since nightfall.” He replied, “This is the lion.” At that, it seemed to understand our conversation, and went forward until it lay down in the middle of the road. When we saw that, we halted and tied both forelegs of both our she-camels with two hobbles. I took my bow while Muqā‘is said, “O Tha‘lab! Do you know from whom we fled to you? From Ziyād.” At that, it flicked pebbles with its tail so that the dust settled on us and on both of our she-camels. I asked, “Should I shoot at it?” And he replied, “Don’t stir him up. When morning comes, he will leave.” The lion then began to roar like thunder while Muqā‘is menaced it until daybreak. When the lion saw that (it was dawn), it turned away, and al-Farazdaq composed the following:381

I did not consider myself a coward after what
I experienced at night beside the canals,

A lion, as if it were a camel [when it stands] on its paws
strong clawed, firm382 clawed,

When I heard it’s roar, I burst into tears
for myself, and said, “Whither shall I flee?”383

While I encouraged myself, and said, “Be steadfast,”
and cinched up my clothing in the anxiety of the situation.

So you are easier to confront384 than Ziyād,
go to you! O render of journeys!385

(According to) Ibn Sa‘d—Abū ‘Ubaydah—A‘yan b. Labatḥah—his father—Shabath b. Rib‘ī al-Riyāḥī: These verses were recited to Ziyād, and he seemed to take pity on al-Farazdaq, saying, “If he should come to me, I would grant him a guaran-

381. These lines are also in Bevan, Nakā‘id, 617.
382. The text reads: mu‘jadah; O reads: mūkhazah, “stabbing.”
383. Lit: “Where is my flight?”
384. Bevan, Nakā‘id reads: “with us.”
385. Bevan, Nakā‘id: “render of travellers” is better.
Between Civil Wars: The Caliphate of Mu‘āwiyah

teed safe-conduct and a stipend.” When al-Farazdaq heard about that, he said:486

This heart recalled a memory about its longing,
remembered a longing that it will never forget.

It remembered Zamya’ whom it does not forget
even if nearly ten pilgrimages487 have passed since having contact with her.

And there is no gazelle with her fawn in the lowlands, the
lowlands of Tihamah,
grazing on488 arāk489 in its luxurient490 vegetation,491

Tan-skinned,492 with dark-red493 tear ducts,494 she watches
over a fawn which she considers to be weak,495

Who fell into a snare in the valley496 of Walwalān
so she struggled until they thought she would escape,497

Lovelier than Zamya’ on a day when she ventured,498
nor rain clouds whose thunder-head went away in the
evening.

386. This poem is also in Bevan, Nakā‘id, 617–18, and Boucher, Divan, 20–
21.
387. That is, “years.”
388. Bevan, Nakā‘id reads: “watching out for.”
389. Arāk is a spiny shrub on which camels graze and from which tooth-
brushes are made.
390. The text reads: manābitihi, C reads: makhāzimihā, “pasture,” Boucher,
Divan reads: makhrāmihā, “openings.”
392. Al-udm, when referring to deer, is a light brown, almost white color. See
393. Hawwā‘ is the color of a lip between red and black. See Ibn Manẓūr, Li-
ṣān, XIV, 107.
394. Bevan, Nakā‘id reads: hawrā‘, “very black and very white eye.”
396. The text reads: bi-wādī; Bevan, Nakā‘id; Boucher, Divan read: bi‘a‘lā,
“on the summit.”
397. Bevan, Nakā‘id, 618 reads: “you thought she would break.”
398. Boucher, Divan reads: “when I encountered her.”
The Events of the Year 50

How many protectors are around her with a bridle, while enemies of folk are vowing to shed my blood.

When they threatened me in the presence of Zamya', such threats grieved her, and she said, "Don't abuse him."

Ziyād summons me for the stipend, but I would not come to him as long as someone with a noble lineage distributes wealth.

With Ziyād, if he wants their stipend, are many men in whom poverty is seen,

Sitting before the gates, petitioners for a need because of serious needs or a new need.

When I feared that his stipend would be black fetters or twisted brown whip-cords,

I reached a lean she-camel, emaciated from travelling by night and traversing the desolate land.

She exhales in a wide open space from the hollow when the protruding ends of her ribs expand the girth.

You see her when the day reaches noon as if she seeks to outrace a camel stallion, or to steal a wager from him.

She wades when the echo rings out after slumber of the early night, roaring, its dark thickets.

399. The text reads: fi-sarīmah, which can also mean "in an isolated patch of sand."
400. This and several following lines are also in Ibn 'Abd Rabbihi, Iqd, V, 320.
401. Bevan, Nakā'id; Boucher, Divan, 21 read: "somewhat old."
402. Bevan, Nakā'id reads: "the air."
403. A daft is a strap made of plaited goat's hair used as a camel-saddle girth.
404. Khudrā refers to the darkness of long winter nights. This line is in the Nakā'id but not in the Divan.
So, if she swerved aside [it was] obliquely, or a waterless desert made her hurry, you see the dusty cracks from it.

They gallop past reddish pebbles as if they crushed coals thereby from every gravel bed.

How many a secret enemy has she gone past in fear of him until she is a bridge for herself.

One directs her to the desert who does not regard the son of Abū Sufyān as having nobility or an excuse.

Don't rush me, my two companions, for perhaps I will reach the watering place before an early-flying kudrah.

In the bosom of the darkness of night, I set out with a youth who was nodding his head, whose drowsiness had intoxicated him.

Drowsiness struck him on the head until he was as one whose skull was wounded by rocks which left a crack in it.

From the journey and travelling all night, you would think that

---

405. Bevan, Nakāʿid reads: “us.”
408. Boucher, Divan, 21 reads:
    On the back of a galloper as if its sides were backs of hard tracts of soil appearing red.
409. Boucher, Divan reads: “Whom you do not regard as having.”
410. Ghādiyah are birds that fly out in the morning or morning clouds. See Ibn Manẓūr, Lisān, XV, 118.
411. A kudrah is a swiftly-flying desert bird. This is the last line in the Divan.
412. Boucher, Divan reads: “journeying uninterruptedly.”
413. Boucher, Divan reads: “until it was as though.”
The Events of the Year 50

Drowsiness gave him wine to drink in every stopping place.

We dragged along, and took care of him until it seemed as though
he saw the first rays of dawn, a troop of golden horsemen.

We proceeded and reached al-Madinah while Sa'id b. al-'As b. Umayyah was in charge of it. As he was in a funeral procession, I followed him and found him sitting while the corpse was being buried. I went up and stood before him, saying, “This is the place of refuge for a man who is not guilty of [shedding] blood or [stealing] property.” Sa'id replied, “I hereby grant you refuge if you have not been guilty of either.” Then he asked, “Who are you?” I answered, “I am Hammâm b. Ghâlib b. Ša'ā'ah. I have praised the amir, and if he saw fit to give me permission, I would let him hear it, so do so.” At that Sa'id said, “Let me have it.” So I recited:

By great-humped [camels] which please the guests as a well
and become heavy in their kneeling-places,
until I came to the end, and Marwân said:

Sitting, they looked at Sa'id.

I responded, “By God, indeed you are standing up, O Abû 'Abd al-Malik.”

Kâ'b b. Ju'ayl also spoke up, “This, by God, is the dream that I saw last night.” Sa'id asked, “What did you see?” He replied, “I saw myself walking in one of the streets of al-Madinah. All at once I was with Ibn Qitrah in a hole, and it seemed as though he wanted to get me, so I avoided him. Al-Ḥuṭay'ah then rose up and split the space between myself and Ibn Qitrah

---

414. This line is from a qaṣīda which is also in Bevan, Nakâ'îd, 619, and Boucher, Divan, 35.
415. Boucher, Divan, 37 reads: “Standing, they looked at Sa'id.” See also Bevan, Nakâ'îd, 619, and Isfahâni, Aghâni, XIX, 21.
416. Al-Ḥuṭay'ah, “the deformed,” was the Arab poet Jarwal b. Aws [b. ca. 582] who appears to have been still alive when Sa'id b. al-'As was governor of al-Madinah. See El', s.v. al-Ḥuṭay'ā.
so that he went past me, saying, "Say what you want, for you know whoever has departed, while whoever has remained does not know you." Ka'b told Sa'id, "This, by God, refers to poetry which will not be explained from this day on."

Al-Farazdaq remained in al-Madinah for a while and in Mecca for a while, and he said about that:

Who would inform Ziyâd about me?
  ambling on, the courier [barid] conveys the message,

That I have fled to Sa'id,
  and whoever Sa'id defends is untouched.

I fled to him from a wild lion
  whose prey the [other] lions leave alone.

So, if you like, you were related to the Christians,
  and, if you like, you were related to the Jews,

(It is also transmitted: And you and I were related to the Jews),

And, if you like, you were related to Fuqaym,
  and you would be related to me and I would be related to the monkeys,

And more loathsome to me than they are the Banū Fuqaym,
  but I will do what you want.

He also said:

Threats came to me from Ziyâd, so I did not sleep,
  while a flood of agony [was] before me and the hill of the plains,

I thus spent the night as if I felt a Khaybariyyah fever
  coursing through my veins or the poison of a snake.

---

417. These lines are also in Bevan, Nakā'id, 619, with variants, and in Isfahānī, Aghānī, XIX, 31.

418. These lines are also in Bevan, Nakā'id, 20, and Boucher, Divan, 114.

419. Al-arāqim are snakes colored black and white. See Ibn Manzūr, Lisān, XII, 249-50.
I wouldn’t think that you would leave me alone, Ziyād son of Ḥarb,
and one with a grudge, I have shamed him not unjustly.

[‘Amr also recited to me: And with the grudge you have
shamed me not unjustly],

_A qasih from me fought Iraq_
hurling invectives, with sharp, piercing points,

_Light on the mouths of narrators, heavy_
on their opponent, settling in the seasons.\(^5\)

It is a long (poem). Al-Farazdaq remained between Mecca and
al-Madinah until Ziyād perished.

In this year the death of al-Ḥakam b. ‘Amr al-Ghifāri oc-
curred at Marw. This happened after he had returned from a
raid against the people of the mountain of al-Ashall.

**Al-Ḥakam b. ‘Amr Raids al-Ashall**

I was told by ‘Umar b. Shabbah—Ḥātim b. Qabīsah—Ghālib
b. Sulaymān—‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Ṣubḥ: I was with al-Ḥakam
of the people of the mountain of al-Ashall are felts and their
vessels are gold.” So Ibn ‘Amr raided them until his force
reached the middle (of the pass), whereupon the enemy took to
the mountain trails and roads and surrounded him. At that he
dispaired of the matter and put al-Muhallab\(^4\) in charge of the
war. Al-Muhallab continued to strive until he captured one of
their leading men and said to him, “Choose whether I should
kill you or whether you will get us out of this pass.” The man
then told him, “Light a fire in one of these roads, order the bag-
gage brought up, and turn towards that road so the folk will
think that you have already started to travel along it. At that,
they will gather [there] for you and abandon the other roads.

\(^4\)The text reads: _mawāsim_, “seasons”; these were times of poetic compe-
tition.

\(^4\)Al-Muhallab b. Abī Ṣufrah al-Azdi [ca. 8–821/630–701/2] became a fa-
mous Basrī general. See EI', s.v. al-Muhallab b. Abī Ṣufra.
Then leave them for another, and they will not overtake you until you have left the pass.” They did so, and escaped, taking great amounts of booty.

We were told by ‘Umar—‘Ali b. Muḥammad: When al-Ḥakam b. Ṭamūr returned from the mountain of al-Ashall he put al-Muhallab in charge of his rear guard. They travelled on narrow mountain roads, and the Turks resisted them, taking to the roads against them. On one of those mountain trails they found a man singing two verses from behind a wall:

[110] You are consoled by steadfastness and your good fortune. You don’t see
an outstanding refuge other than the former nights,

As if my heart, from my memory of the refuge
and the people of refuge, has the feathers of a bird
fluttering in it.

When he was brought to al-Ḥakam, the latter asked him about his circumstance. The man explained, “I competed with my cousin, so I left. I went up and down in the land until I settled in this country.” Al-Ḥakam took him to Ziyād in Iraq. Al-Ḥakam escaped from [the pass] so that he reached Harāt, and then he returned to Marw.

I was told by 'Umar—Ḥātim b. Qabisah—Ghālib b. Sulaymān—‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Ṣubh: Ziyād wrote to al-Ḥakam, “By God, if you survive, I would certainly behead you!” That was because Ziyād had written to him when the news reached him about what booty he had taken, “Indeed the Commander of the Faithful has written to me to select gold, silver, and precious objects for him so don’t move anything until you take that out.” Al-Ḥakam had written back to him, “Now then, indeed, your letter arrived [in which] you mention that ‘the Commander of the Faithful has written to me to select all [the] gold, silver, and precious objects for him, so don’t move anything.’ Indeed, the Book of God, Almighty and Great, is prior to the letter of the Commander of the Faithful. Indeed, by God, if the heavens and the earth were of one piece a servant must fear

God, Almighty and Great. God, praise be to Him, Most High, gave him a way out." He also told the people to go and take their booty, so they did, while he had set aside the fifth. He divided that booty among them equally. Al-Ḥakam then said, "O God, if I have done what You consider good, then take me." Thus he died in Khurasan at Marw. (According to 'Umar—‘Ali b. Muḥammad: When al-Ḥakam was dying at Marw, he appointed Anas b. Abī Unās as his deputy—that was in this year.)
Among the events during this year were the winter campaign of Fadālah b. 'Ubayd against Byzantine territory, the summer raid of Busr b. Abī Arṭāt, and the execution of Ḥujr b. 'Adī and his companions.

Ḥujr b. 'Adī's Execution

Hīshām b. Muḥammad—Abū Mikhnaf—al-Muẓālim b. Saʿīd, al-Ṣaqʿab b. Zuhayr, Fuḍayl b. Khadij, and al-Ḥusayn b. 'Uqbah al-Marādī have all told me some of this narrative, so their account was combined with what I transmitted of the narrative about Ḥujr b. 'Adī al-Kindī and his companions: When Muʿāwiyah b. Abī Sufyān put al-Mughirah b. Shuʿbah in charge of al-Kūfah in Jumādā 41 (September 2—October 30, 661), he summoned him. After praising and glorifying God, he said, "Now then, indeed a forbearing person has been admonished in the past."²³ Al-Muẓālim has said:

---

²³ See Freytag, Proverbia, 1, 55–7.
²⁴ Jarīr b. 'Abd al-Masīh [or 'Abd al-'Uzzah] al-Muẓālim (d. ca. 569) was
A forbearing person has been admonished in the past, and man was taught only in order to learn.

The wise might do what you want without instruction. Although I have wanted to advise you about many things, I left them alone, trusting in your discernment of what pleases me, what helps my regime and what sets my subjects [ra’iyyah] on the right path. I would continue to advise you about a quality of yours—do not refrain from abusing ‘Ali and criticizing him, nor from asking God’s mercy upon ‘Uthmân and His forgiveness for him. Continue to shame the companions of ‘Ali, keep them at a distance, and don’t listen to them. Praise the faction of ‘Uthmân, bring them near, and listen to them.” At that al-Mughirah responded, “I have experienced [others], and [they] have experienced me. Before working for you I worked for others. I do not mind rejection, nor promotion, nor demotion. After you have experienced [me], you will praise or blame [me].” Mu’āwiyyah replied, “No, we shall praise if God wills.”

(According to) Abū Mikhnaф—al-Ṣaq’ab b. Zuhayr—al-Sha’bī: We never had a governor like him afterwards, even if previously there had been good officials.

Al-Mughirah remained governor of al-Kūfah for Mu’āwiyyah for seven years and (some) months. He was the best behaved and the most [strongly] in favor of well-being, in spite of the fact that he would not stop blaming ‘Ali for what had happened and for killing ‘Uthmân. He continued to curse those who had killed the latter, while he called for mercy and forgiveness for ‘Uthmân and vindication for his companions. When Ḥujr b. ‘Adi heard that, he used to say, “May God rebuke and curse you instead.” Then he stood up and said, “Indeed, God, Almighty and Great, says, ‘Be custodians in fairness, witnesses for God.”’ I testify that the one you rebuke and condemn is more deserving of merit, and the one you vindicate and extol is more entitled to blame.” Al-Mughirah would then tell him, “O Ḥujr, your arrow was shot; now I am governor over you. O Ḥujr, woe unto you. Fear the regime. Fear its wrath and its power. Indeed

---


---

the fury of the regime can destroy many of the likes of you.” Then he would desist and forgive Ḥujr. He continued thus until, at the end of his governorship, al-Mughirah arose and said what he used to say about ‘Ali and Mu’āwiyah, which was, “O God, have mercy on ‘Uthmān b. ‘Affān and don’t punish him, but reward him for his best work. For, indeed, he acted according to Your Book and the example [sunnah] of Your Prophet. He united our speech, and prevented our blood from being shed, and yet, he was wrongly killed. O God, have mercy also on his adherents, supporters, friends, and those who seek vengeance for him.” He would also call for ‘Uthmān’s murderers (to be punished). At that, Ḥujr b. ‘Adi jumped up, and let out a scream at al-Mughirah that everyone who was in the mosque and outside of it heard, saying, “You certainly do not understand what men burn for, because of your senility,” O man. Order our rations and stipends for us, for you have certainly withheld them from us, and that is not your right, and no one who preceded you has desired that. You have become passionate about blaming the Commander of the Faithful and praising the criminals.” At that, more than two-thirds of the people stood up with him saying, “By God. Ḥujr was right and honest. Order our rations and stipends for us, for this talk of yours doesn’t do us any good, and it gives us nothing profitable.” And they increased this kind of talk.

At that, al-Mughirah descended (from the pulpit) and entered (the governor’s residence). When his folk asked permission to attend him, he admitted them, and they said, “Why do you leave this man alone who makes this statement and whose insolence is so bold during your regime. Indeed, you acquire two faults thereby. The first is the degradation of your regime. The other is that if it should reach Mu’āwiyah, it would make him angry with you.” ‘Abdallāh b. Abī ‘Aqīl al-Thaqafī was the most severe of them (in) speaking to him about the matter of Ḥujr and its importance. Al-Mughirah answered, “I have killed him. He will come to a governor after me, and will regard him like me and treat him in the same way as you see him treating

---

426. Isfahānī, Aghānī, XVI, 2: “What he burns for, or are you senile?”
The Events of the Year 51

me. As a result, the governor will seize Ḥujr at once, and kill him in an evil way. Indeed my appointed time draws near, and my actions have become weak. I do not want to start the people of this city killing the best among themselves and shedding their blood. They are fortunate thereby, while I am miserable. Mu‘āwiyah will grow strong in this world, while al-Mughirah will be humbled on the Day of Resurrection. But, I shall receive those who are pleasing and forgive those who are displeasing. I shall praise the prudent and admonish the impudent until death should separate me from them. They will remember me if they should put officials to the test after me.”

(According to) Abū Mikhnaf—‘Uthmān b. ‘Uqbah al-Kindi—a shaykh of the district who related this account: By God we put them to the test, and found him to be the best of them. He was the most commendable toward the innocent, the most forgiving toward those who were offensive, and the most receptive to excuses.

(According to) Hishām—‘Awānah: Al-Mughirah became governor of al-Kūfah in Jumādā 4(661/662), and he died this year. Al-Kūfah and al-Baṣrah were then combined for Ziyād b. Abī Sufyān. Ziyād advanced until he entered the citadel at al-Kūfah. Then he ascended the pulpit, and after he had praised and extolled God, he said, “Now then, indeed, we have been put to the test and we have tested. We have ruled and rulers have ruled us, and we have found that this matter would only be set right in the end by that which set it right at the beginning: tractable obedience, the same in secret as openly, when people are absent as when they are present, and [in] their hearts as [on] their tongues. We found that only flexibility without weakness and strength without violence would reform the people. As for myself, by God, I shall not undertake a matter with you unless I carry it out to its smallest detail. There is no lie to which God and the people are witness greater than the lie of an imām upon the pulpit.” Then he mentioned ‘Uthmān and his companions, and praised them, and mentioned his murderers, and cursed them. Ḥujr then got up and did as he had done to al-Mughirah.

428. See Iṣfahānī, Aghānī, XVI, 4.
Whenever Ziyād would return to al-Baṣrāh he would put 'Amr b. al-Hurayth in charge of al-Kūfah. When he had returned to al-Baṣrāh, he heard that the partisans of ‘Alī had gathered to Ḥujr and had openly cursed and disavowed Mu‘āwiyyah, and that they had thrown pebbles at 'Amr b. al-Hurayth. At that, he set out for al-Kūfah and, upon arriving there, he entered the citadel. Then he went out and ascended the pulpit wearing a robe of silk brocade and a green silk scarf, having parted his hair, while Ḥujr was sitting in the mosque surrounded by more of his companions than before. After Ziyād had praised and extolled God, he said, “Now then, injustice and transgression have fatal consequences. Indeed, these [people] gathered and did evil. They felt safe from me, so they took liberties with me. I swear by God, if you do not straighten out, I shall cure you with your [own] medicine.” He continued “I shall have accomplished nothing if I don’t protect the plaza of al-Kūfah from Ḥujr and make him an example for whoever should come after him. Woe unto your mother, Ḥujr! You found a wolf for dinner.” Then he recited:

Tell Nuṣayḥah about the herdsman of her camels, that he found a wolf for dinner.

Regarding the cause of the matter concerning Ḥujr, someone other than Awānah said that which I was told by ‘Ali b. Ḥasan—Muslim al-Jarmī—Makhlad b. al-Ḥasan—Ḥishām—Muḥammad b. Sirīn⁴³¹ Ziyād spoke one Friday,⁴³² and by protracting the sermon he delayed the ṣalāt (worship). At that, Ḥujr b. ‘Adī said to him, “The ṣalāt!” But he continued speaking. Ḥujr then repeated, “The ṣalāt!” But he continued speaking. When Ḥujr was afraid the (proper time for) worship would be past, he took a fist-full of pebbles and stood up to worship.

---

⁴²⁹ C reads: “he stayed in al-Kūfah six months, then he put 'Amr b. al-Hurayth in charge of it.”

⁴³⁰ Lit: “dinner found a wolf for him.” That is, he went out looking for dinner and chanced upon a wolf, so the wolf ate him, said of someone whose pursuit of his own needs leads him to destruction. See Maydānī, Amthāl, I, 329; Freytag, Proverbia, I, 599–600.

⁴³¹ Muhammad b. Sirīn (34–110[654–728]) was an early Baṣrān authority on hadith. See Ibn Sa’d, Tabaqāt, VII, 140–50.

⁴³² The text reads: fi al-jum‘ah.
and the people stood up with him. When Ziyād saw that, he descended (from the pulpit) and led the people in worship. When he had finished, he wrote to Mu'āwiya about the matter of Hūjr and exaggerated it. Mu'āwiya then wrote back to him, "Clamp him in irons, then deliver him to me." When Mu'āwiya's letter arrived, and Hūjr's folk wanted to protect him, Hūjr said, "No, pay heed and obey instead."

When he had been clamped in irons, he was delivered to Mu'āwiya. When Hūjr entered the latter's presence, he said, "Peace be upon you, O Commander of the Faithful, and the mercy of God and His blessings." But Mu'āwiya replied to him, "Commander of the Faithful! By God, I will not be addressed by you or consider speaking to you. Take him out and behead him." Upon being taken out from Mu'āwiya's presence, Hūjr said to those who were in charge of dealing with him, "Give me leave until I perform two prostrations." They replied, "Perform them." When he had performed two prostrations which he shortened, he said, "Lest you suppose that I am doing other than what I am, I would have liked for my prostrations to take longer than they did. These two prostrations are as good as any previous devotions." Then he told whomever of his folk attended him, "Don't undo the irons, and don't wash the blood off of me. I may meet Mu'āwiya in the future on the street." Then he was brought forth, and his head was cut off.

(According to) Makhlad—Hishām: Whenever Muḥammad was asked about washing martyrs, he used to tell them the account of Hūjr. Muḥammad said, When 'A'ishah, the Mother of the Believers, met Mu'āwiya (Makhlad said: I suppose he was in Mecca), she asked, "O Mu'āwiya, where was your forbearance (ḥilm) towards Hūjr?" He replied, "[Someone] rightly-guided did not attend me on that occasion, O Mother of the Believers." Ibn Sirīn said, "We heard that when his death was immanent he began to make a gurgling sound saying, "My day [of death] is long because of you, O Hūjr.""

(According to) Hishām—Abū Mikhnaf—Isāmīl b. Nu'āyml al-Namīrī—Ḥusayn b. 'Abdallāh al-Hamdānī: When I was in the police force of Ziyād, he said, "One of you hurry off to Hūjr, and summon him." At that the commander of the police, who was Shaddād b. al-Haytham al-Hilālī, told me to go and sum-
mon him. When I came to him, saying, "Comply with the governor," his friends said, "Don't go to him or show respect." Upon returning to Ziyād and informing him, he ordered the commander of the police to send men with me, so he sent several men. We then came to Ḥujr, saying, "Comply with the governor." When they cursed and reviled us, we returned to Ziyād, and informed him about it. At that, Ziyād rushed to the notables of the Kūfah, saying, "O people of al-Kūfah, do you break with one hand while you console with the other? Your bodies are with me, while your affections are with this obsessed, stupid, crazy Ḥujr. By God, this comes from your plotting and your deceit. By God, demonstrate your innocence to me, or I shall bring against you folk by whom I shall bring about your downfall and your humiliation." At that, they rushed to Ziyād saying, "God forbid, may He be praised, that we have any other view in this situation than obedience to you and to the Commander of the Faithful. Command us to do whatever will satisfy you and demonstrate our obedience and our disagreement with Ḥujr." Ziyād replied, "Then let every one of you go to this group around Ḥujr and summon your brother, son, relative, and whoever of your clan obeys you, so that you make every one [of them that] you can stand up and leave him." They did this and made the majority of those (who were) with Ḥujr b. 'Adi stand up.

When Ziyād saw that the majority of those with Ḥujr had stood up and left him, he told Shaddād b. al-Haytham al-Hilālī—it is also said, Haytham b. Shaddād—the commander of his police, "Hurry off to Ḥujr. If he complies with your request, bring him to me, and if not, order whoever is with you to pull out the clubs of the marketplace. Then assault them with the clubs so that you may bring him to me, and beat whoever resists." Al-Hilālī then came to Ḥujr, saying, "Comply with the governor!" The friends of Ḥujr replied, "No, there

---

433. The text reads: 'umud. Ziyād's guard [haras] was armed with staffs or clubs. Since a payment was levied on the people of the marketplace to support the guard, they may have patrolled the marketplace with their clubs. The clubs were probably stored in a bin in the mosque. See Behrnauer, "Mémoire," 467; Tabari, II, 79.
The Events of the Year 51

shall be no satisfaction. We shall not comply with him.” Al-Hilālī then told his men, “Seize the clubs of the marketplace.” At that, they rushed to pull out the clubs, and advanced with them. 'Umayr b. Yazīd al-Kindi of the Banū Hind—that is Abū al-'Amarātah—said, “Indeed, I am the only man among you who has a sword, and that will not be enough for you.” Ḥujr asked, “What do you think?” 'Umayr replied, “Get away from this place, and join your family. Your folk will defend you.” As Ziyād stood watching them while he was upon the pulpit, the police came with clubs. One of the Ḥamrā', called Bakr b. 'Ubayd, struck the head of 'Amr b. al-Ḥamiq with a club, telling him. Abū Sufyān b. 'Uwaymir and 'Ajlān b. Rabī‘ah, who both belonged to the Azd, came to him and carried him (off). They brought him to the house of a man who belonged to the Azd called 'Ubaydallāh b. Mālik. They concealed him there, and he stayed hidden until he left.435

(According to) Abū Mikhnaf—Yūsuf b. Yazīd—'Abdallāh b. 'Awf436 b. al-Āhmar: When we left for the campaign of Bājumyrā, one year before the death of Muš'ab [in 71[679]], I was accompanied by an Āhmārī.44 By God, I had not seen him since the day on which 'Amr b. al-Ḥamiq was struck, and I did not think that I would recognize him if I saw him. When I saw him then, I supposed that he was Bakr. As we were still in view of the houses of al-Kūfah, I disliked asking him if he was the man who had struck 'Umar b. al-Ḥamiq, lest he contradict me. As a result, I told him, “I have not seen you since the day on which you struck the head of 'Amr b. al-Ḥamiq with the club in the mosque; I recognize you now.” He answered me, “You have not lost your eyesight. How strong your vision is. That was the Devil’s matter. Indeed, I had heard that it was a righteous matter, and I have regretted that blow, so I ask God’s forgiveness.” At that, I said to him, “Don’t you think, by God, that you and I should not part until I hit you a blow on your head like that

434. Lit: “no comfort for an eye.”
435. See the account in Ḥṣahānī, Aghānī, XVI, 3–4.
436. Ḥṣahānī, Aghānī: 'Ubaydallāh b. 'Awīn.
437. Ḥ reads: “that blow,” but see Ḥṣahānī, Aghānī, XVI, 4. An Āhmārī was one of the Ḥamrā', a group of Iranian soldiers settled at al-Kūfah.
which you struck 'Amr b. al-Ḥamīq, so that either I die or you die!" He then adjured and implored me by God, but I refused him and summoned a young servant of mine called Rashīd, one of the captives from Isbāhān, who had his firm spear with him. When I took it from Rashīd, I attacked Bakr with it. He then dismounted from his animal, and I caught him when both of his feet were level with the ground. I grazed the top of his head with the spear so that he fell on his face. I then went on my way, and left him. He recovered afterwards, and I met him two more times. Each time he would say, "God is between you and me." And I would reply, "God, Almighty and Great, is between you and 'Amr b. al-Ḥamīq."

Then he resumed the previous account: When Bakr struck 'Amr that blow and those two men carried him off, the friends of Ḥujr withdrew to the gates of the Kindah. A man of Ḥudham who was in the police was striking a man called 'Abdallāh b. Khalīfah al-Ṭā'ī with a club. He struck him a blow and knocked him down, saying extemporaneously:

She knew on the day of tumult, my friend,
that I, whenever my troop flees,

And its enemies multiply or diminish,
that I am lethal on the morning it started.

The hand of 'Ā'idh b. Ḥamālah al-Ṭamīmī was also struck and his eyetooth was broken, so he said:

If they break my eyetooth and the bone of my forearm,
Indeed, I have the force of experience,
And the strife of the battling hero.

Wresting a club from one of the police, he fought with it, protecting Ḥujr and his friends until they left the front of the gates of the Kindah. Ḥujr's mule had been [left] standing, and Abū al-'Ammarātah brought her to him, saying, "They are all bastards except you. By God, I certainly think that you have killed yourself and killed us with you." Ḥujr then put his foot in the stirrup, but he was unable to mount, so Abū al-'Ammarātah lifted him onto his mule. Abū al-'Ammarātah then rushed to his own horse, and had just mounted when Yazīd b. Ṭarīf, who had a
slight limp, reached him. He struck Abū al-'Amarraṭah with his club on the thigh, and Abū al-'Amarraṭah drew this sword and struck the head of Yazīd b. Ṭarīf with it so that he fell on his face. He recovered afterwards, and 'Abbālāh b. Hammām al-Salūlī says about him:

I blame the son of baseness, except for you, openly, to a hero, courageous and unyielding,

Returning the blow of the armored ones with his sword, on the top of the head when there is dismay, other than base,

To a horseman of both attacking [sides] the day you both met, at Ṣīffin, a sire, the best offspring of sires.

I considered fighting with Ibn Barṣā al-Ḥitar' as you fought with Zayd on the Day of Dār Ḥakīm.

That sword was the first one which was employed to strike at al-Kūfah in the disputes among the people.

Ḥūjr and Abū al-'Amarraṭah proceeded until they both reached Ḥūjr’s residence. Many of his supporters gathered to Ḥūjr, and Qays b. Qahdān al-Kindī went forth on his donkey, setting out for the assemblies of the Kindah, saying:

O folk of Ḥūjr, resist and contend on behalf of your brother for a while, so fight.

Let Ḥūjr not be abandoned by you. Is there not among you a lancer and an archer,

And an armored horseman, and infantryman, and swordsman who does not quit?

But many of the Kindah did not join Ḥūjr, and Ziyād said, while he was on the pulpit, “Let the Hamdān, Tamīm, Hawāzin, the sons of A'ṣur, the Madḥḥīj, Asad, and the Ghaṭafān rise

438. Cairo reads: “You considered.”
439. Lit: “circle of the rump.”
up and come to the cemetery of the Kindah. Whoever gathers there is to proceed to Ḥujr and bring him to me.” Then, since he disliked to dispatch a troop of the Mudar together with a troop of the people of al-Yaman, because discord and disagreement might occur between them, and fanaticism might ruin their relationship, he said, “Let the Tamim, Hawāzin, the sons of Aʿṣur, the Asad, and the Ghatafān stay, and let the Madhhij and Hamdān proceed to the cemetery of the Kindah. Then let them go to Ḥujr and bring him to me. Let the rest of the people of the Yaman go and halt at the cemetery of the Sāʿidiyyin, and then proceed to their companion, and bring him to me.” At that, the Azd, Bajilah, Kathʿam, Anṣār, Ḥamdan, and Qudāʾah went out and halted at the cemetery of the Sāʿidiyyin. The Ḥadramawt did not go out with the people of the Yaman because of their position among the Kindah. They disliked having to go out in pursuit of Ḥujr, because the Ḥadramawt traditionally called upon the Kindah for support (in war).  

[According to] Abū Mikhnaf—Yaḥyā b. Saʿīd b. Mikhnaf—Muḥammad b. Mikhnaf: indeed I was with the people of the Yaman in the cemetery of the Sāʿidiyyin when the leaders of the people of the Yaman assembled deliberating about the matter of Ḥujr. ʿAbd al-Rahmān b. Mikhnaf told them, “I offer you advice. If you should accept it, I would hope that you would be safe from blame and offense. I think you should delay a little, for soon youths of the Hamdān and Madhhij will save you the trouble of what you dislike doing, namely the misdeed of your folk concerning your companion.” They agreed on that. As a result, by God, it was only when, and certainly not until, we learned that the Madhhij and Hamdān had entered and taken every one they found of the Banu Jabalah, 441 that the people of the Yaman marched past along the sides of the houses of the Kindah as an excuse. When Ziyād heard about that, he praised the Madhhij and Hamdān, and blamed the rest of the people of the Yaman.

440. The Anṣār, “Helpers,” were Muslims from al-Madinah who had settled in al-Kufah.
441. See above, n. 277.
442. ʿIṣḥānī, Aghānī reads: “among the Banu Bajilah.” That is, those who were friends of Ḥujr.
When Hujr reached his house, and saw how few of his folk were with him and heard that the Madhhij and Hamdān had halted at the cemetery of the Kindah and the rest of the people of the Yaman at the cemetery of the Sā`idiyyin, he said to his companions, “Depart, for by God, you won’t be able to deal with those of your folk who have gathered against you. I don’t want to subject you to destruction.” As they were about to depart, the lead cavalry of the Madhhij and Hamdān caught them. So 'Umayr b. Yazīd, Qays b. Yazīd, 'Ubaydah b. 'Amr al-Baddi, 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Muhriz al-Ṭumāhi, and Qays b. Shīmr engaged them in battle. The cavalry fought against him 443 for a while, inflicting wounds. Qays b. Yazīd was captured while the rest of (Hujr’s) folk escaped. At that, Hujr told them, “Scatter! Don’t fight! I shall take to one of the side streets, then take a road near the Banū Ḥūt.” 444 He went off until he reached the house of one of their men called Sulaym b. Yazīd. Hujr entered Sulaym’s house, while (Ziyād’s) folk came seeking him until they reached that house. At that, Sulaym b. Yazīd took his sword, and was about to go out to them, while his daughters wept. So Hujr asked him, “What do you intend?” Sulaym replied, “I want, by God, to ask them to leave you. If they do so, [fine]; and if not, I shall protect you, fighting them with this sword of mine as long as its blade is firm in my hand.” Hujr told him, “You are no bastard. Then what a miserable thing I will have brought upon your daughters.” Sulaym answered, “Indeed, by God, they will only be safe and provided for with the Living [One], Who does not die. I shall never exchange shame for anything, and you shall not go out of my house as a prisoner while I am alive and possess my sword-blade. If I am killed protecting you, then you should do what seems good to you.” Hujr asked, “Is there no wall in this house of yours which I could break through or an opening I could get out through? Perhaps God, Almighty and Great, will save me from them and save you as well. If [Ziyād’s] folk do not capture me in your house, they will not harm you.” Sulaym replied, “Yes, here is an opening which will get you out to

443. C and Ḥṣfāhānī, Aghānī read: “against them.”
444. The manuscripts and Cairo and Ḥṣfāhānī, Aghānī read: Banū Ḥarb.
the houses of the Banū al-'Anbar and to others of your folk." He then went out, past the Banū Dhul, who told him, "[Ziyād's] folk have already gone by in search of you, following your tracks." He told them, "I am fleeing from them." He then went out, with their youths showing him the way. They took him through the alleys until he reached the Nakha'. At that point he told them, "Depart, may God have mercy upon you." At that, they left him, and he came to the house of 'Abdallāh b. al-Ḥārith, the brother of al-Ashtar, and entered it. As soon as he came in, 'Abdallāh threw down the cushions, rolled out the carpets, and received him joyfully with good cheer. Then he learned that the police were asking about him among the Nakha'. That was because a black slave girl called Admā' met them and asked, "Whom do you seek?" When they answered that they were seeking Ḥujr, she responded, "There he is. I saw him among the Nakha'." At that, they went off towards the Nakha'. Ḥujr then left the home of 'Abdallāh in disguise, and 'Abdallāh b. al-Ḥārith rode with him at night until he came to the house of Rabi'ah b. Nājid al-Azdi, among the Azd, where he stayed for a day and a night.

When they were unable to capture Ḥujr, Ziyād summoned Muḥammad b. al-Ash'ath, and told him, "O Abū Maythā', by God, either bring Ḥujr to me or I shall chop down every single palm tree of yours and demolish every single house. Then you will not be safe from me until I cut you to pieces." He answered, "Grant me a respite so that I may look for him." Ziyād answered, "Grant me a respite so that I may look for him." Ziyād replied, "I grant you a respite for three days. If you bring him, [fine], if not, consider yourself doomed." Muḥammad was taken out red faced, and pushed roughly towards the prison. At that, Ḥujr b. Yazid al-Kindi said to Ziyād, "Let me vouch for him, and release him to search for his companion. If he were freed, his faculties would be more adequate to capture him than if he were imprisoned." Ziyād asked, "Will you vouch for him?" He replied that he would and Ziyād declared, "However, by God, if he escapes from you, I shall certainly make you visit death, even if you are honored by me now." Ḥujr b. Yazid answered, "Indeed, he will not do it, so release him." Then Ḥujr b. Yazid interceded with him for Qays b. Yazid, who had been brought to Ziyād as a prisoner. Ziyād told them, "Don't worry
about Qays. We have known his views about ‘Uthmān and his bravery at the Battle of Siffin with the Commander of the Faithful.” Then he sent for Qays. When he was brought to him, Ziyād told him, “Indeed, I knew that you did not fight along with Hujr because you shared his views, but you fought along with him out of solidarity. I have forgiven you for it because of what I know about your good views and the excellence of your bravery, but I will not leave you alone until you bring me your brother, ‘Umayr.” Qays answered, “I will bring him to you, if God wills.” Ziyād said, “Then give me someone who will vouch for him along with yourself.” Qays replied, “This Ḥujr b. Yazīd will vouch for him along with me.” Ḥujr b. Yazīd said, “Yes, I vouch for him on condition that you grant him security for his property and his blood.” Ziyād replied, “You have that.” Then they both hurried off and brought ‘Umayr in his wounded condition. Ziyād ordered for him to be weighed down with iron. Then the men took ‘Umayr and lifted him until, when he was waist-high, they threw him down so he fell on the ground. Then they lifted him up again and threw him down. They did that with him several times. At that, Ḥujr b. Yazīd got up and asked Ziyād “Did you not guarantee his property and his blood? May God reform you.” Ziyād replied, “Of course, I guaranteed his property and his blood, and I am not shedding his blood or taking his property.” Ḥujr b. Yazīd retorted, “May God reform you, he is almost cured to death by it.” Ḥujr b. Yazīd drew near to ‘Umayr while those people of the Yaman who were with him rose up, drew near ‘Umayr, and spoke to him. Ziyād then asked, “Do you vouch to me for him, so that whenever he commits a misdeed, you will bring him to me?” They said that they would and Ziyād asked, “Do you also vouch to [pay] me blood money for the blows at the place of worship?” When they replied, “We vouch for it,” Ziyād let ‘Umayr go.

Ḥujr b. ‘Adī stayed in the residence of Rabī‘ah b. Nājid al-Azdi for a day and a night. Then Ḥujr sent a youth of his called Rashid, belonging to the people of Iṣbahān, to Muḥammad b. al-Ash‘āth (saying), ‘I have heard what this stubborn tyrant did

445. C reads: “against the Muslims.”
to you. Don't be alarmed at all by him. I will come out to you. Gather a group of your folk, then enter Ziyād's presence and ask him to grant me a guarantee of safe-conduct in order to send me to Muʿāwiyah so he may see what he thinks of me.” Ibn al-Ash'ath then went out to Hujr b. Yazīd, Jarīr b. ʿAbdal-lāh, and ʿAbdallāh b. al-Ḥārith, the brother of al-Ashtar, and brought them. They entered Ziyād's presence, interceded with him, and beseeched him to grant Hujr a guarantee of safe-conduct in order to send him to Muʿāwiyah so the latter could see what he thought of him. When Ziyād did so, they sent Hujr's messenger back to him informing him that they had gotten what he had asked for, and commanding him to come. When he came and entered Ziyād's presence, Ziyād said, “Welcome to you Abū ʿAbd al-Rahmān, war in the time of war, and war while the people have made peace. ‘A many-colored dog harms its own family.’” Hujr replied, “I did not renounce obedience or withdraw from any community. Indeed I am on my allegiance.” Ziyād answered, “How wrong, 0 Hujr. You break with one hand and nurse with the other. When God gives you an opportunity, you want us to overlook it. Not at all, by God.” Hujr asked, “Didn’t you grant me a guarantee of safe-conduct so that I should come to Muʿāwiyah and he could see what he thinks of me?” Ziyād replied, “Yes, we have done so. Take him off to the prison.” When Hujr had been sent out of his presence, Ziyād remarked, “However, by God, if there were no guarantee of safe-conduct, he would not depart without spilling his own heartsblood.” (According to) Hishām b. ʿUrwah—ʿAwānah: Ziyād remarked, “By God, I certainly intend to snip the thread of his neck.”

(According to) Hishām b. Muḥammad—Abū Mīkhnaf, and al-Mujālid b. Saʿīd—al-Shaʿbī, and Zakariyyāʾ b. Abī Zāʿidah—Abū Ishaq: When Hujr was sent out of Ziyād’s presence, he shouted at the top of his voice, “O God, I am on my allegiance. I don’t revoke it or call for its revocation. Listen to God and the

---

446. Maydānī, Amthāl, II, 14–15, Freytag, Proverbia, II, 89–90. Such a dog, by barking at others, gives its masters away, so they perish and the dog with them.

447. Isfahānī, Aghānī, XVI, 4 reads: “without casting down his sinews.”
people." He was wearing a cloak with a hood (burnus) on a cold morning. He was thus imprisoned for ten nights while Ziyād’s only labor was to seek the leaders of Ḥujr’s companions.

At that, 'Amr b. al-Ḥamīq and Rīfāʿat b. Shaddād left and halted at al-Madā’in. Then they departed until they came to the territory of Mosul. They came to a mountain and hid there. When the official of that subdistrict (rustāq), who was a man belonging to the Hamdān called 'Abdallāh b. Abī Balṭā'ah, heard that two men had hidden in the mountainside, he suspected their circumstances. He set out for them with cavalry and local people towards the mountain. When he reached them, they both went out. As far as 'Amr b. al-Ḥamīq is concerned, he was sick and his belly was billious so he could not resist. But as for Rīfāʿat b. Shaddād, he was young and strong, and jumped on his race horse. Rīfāʿat asked 'Amr, "Shall I fight on your behalf?" 'Amr replied, "It would be of no use to me for you to fight. Save yourself if you can." When Rīfāʿat attacked them, they parted for him, and he went out, his horse bolting with him, while the cavalry went off in pursuit of him. As 'Amr was a good shot, he began to shoot every horseman who overtook him, injuring or wounding him. So they turned away from him. When 'Amr b. al-Ḥamīq was taken, they asked him, "Who are you?" He replied, "One who, if you leave him alone, would be peaceful to you, and if you fight him would harm you." Thus they asked him, but he refused to tell them. Ibn Abī Balṭā'ah then sent him to the governor of Mosul, who was 'Abd al-Raḥmān b. 'Abdallāh b. 'Uthmān al-Thaqafī. When the latter saw 'Amr b. al-Ḥamīq, he recognized him, and wrote to Muʿāwiyah with his information. Muʿāwiyah wrote back, "'Amr claimed that he stabbed 'Uthmān nine times with a dagger that he had with him, so stab him nine times just as he stabbed 'Uthmān." At that, 'Amr was taken out and stabbed nine times, and he died from the first or second blow.

{According to} Abū Mikhnaf—al-Mujālid—al-Shaʿbī, and Zakariyyā b. Abī Zāʿidah—Ishāq: When Ziyād sent in search of the companions of Ḥujr, they began to flee from him, and he

448. The text reads: saqā, to be full of yellow water which collects in the stomach from illness.
seized whomever of them he was able. He sent the commander of the police, who was Shaddād b. al-Haytham, to Qabiṣah b. Ḍubay’ah b. Ḥarmalah al-ʿAbsi. When Qabiṣah summoned his folk and took his sword, Ribʿi b. Ḥirāsh b. Jahsh al-ʿAbsi and a few men belonging to his folk came to him. When he wanted to fight, the commander of the police said to him, “You are secure for your blood and your property, so why would you kill yourself?” His friends then said to him, “You have been granted security, so why do you kill yourself and us with you?” He replied, “Woe unto you! Indeed, by God, if I fall into the hands of this bastard son of the whore⁴⁴⁹ I will never be released from him unless he kills me.” They answered, “By no means,” so he put his hand in theirs and they brought him to Ziyād. When they had entered his presence, Ziyād said, “By the tribe of Ḥabs, you are respected by me for the faith. However, by God, I shall certainly make an occupation for you instead of inciting riots and attacking governors.” Qabiṣah said, “I only came to you under a guarantee of safe-conduct.” Ziyād ordered, “Take him off to the prison.”

Qays b. ʿUbād al-Shaybānī also came to Ziyād telling him, “There is a man among us belonging to the Banū Hammām called Sayfī b. Fasīl, one of the leaders of Ḥujr’s companions. He is the most violent of people against you.” When Ziyād had him brought to him, he said to Sayfī, “O Enemy of God, what do you say about Abū Turāb?” Sayfī replied, “I do not know Abū Turāb.” Ziyād asked, “What will make you recognize him?” Sayfī answered, “I do not know him.” Ziyād asked, “Don’t you know ‘All b. Abī Ṭālib?” When Sayfī replied that he did, Ziyād responded, “That is Abū Turāb.” Sayfī rejoined, “Certainly not! He is Abū al-Ḥasan and al-Ḥusayn.” At that, the commander of the police said to him, “The amir says to you that he is Abū Turāb, and you say ‘no’?” Sayfī responded, “If the amir lied, do you want me to lie and give false testimony as he did?” Ziyād told him, “This also is added to your crime. Bring me the stick!” It was brought and Ziyād asked, “What do you say?”⁴⁵⁰ Sayfī answered, “The best words that I

⁴⁴⁹ That is, Ziyād.
⁴⁵⁰ ʿĪṣafānī, Aghānī, adds: “about ‘Alī.”
was saying about one of God’s servants [I say about the Commander] of the Faithful.” Ziyād commanded, “Beat his shoulder with the staff until he hags the ground.” So Ṣayfī was beaten until he stayed on the ground. Then Ziyād said, “Stop beating him. What do you say about ‘Ali?” Ṣayfī replied, “By God, if you slice me up with razors and knives, I would only say what you heard me say.” Ziyād said, “Curse him or I shall certainly behead you.” Ṣayfī retorted, “Then you have already cut it off, by God. And if you refuse to do anything except cut it off, I will be satisfied with God and you will be wretched.” Ziyād commanded, “Push him by his neck,” and added, “Load him with iron, and cast him into prison.”

Then he sent for ‘Abdallah b. Khalīfah al-Ṭā‘ī who had been present with Ḥujr and had fought [Ziyād’s men] fiercely. Ziyād sent Bukayr b. Ḥumrān al-Āḥmārī, who was an assistant of the officials, for him with some of his companions. When they proceeded in search of him, and found him in the Mosque of Ādi b. Ḥātim, they took him out. But ‘Abdallah was formidable. When they wanted to leave with him, he resisted, struggling and fighting with them. So they bashed him, and threw stones at him until he fell down. At that, Maythā’, his sister, called out, “O kinfolk of Ṭayyī! Do you betray Ibn Khalīfah with your tongue and your spearhead?” When al-Āḥmārī heard her summons, he was afraid that the Ṭayyī would gather and that he would perish. So he fled, and the women of Ṭayyī went out and brought ‘Abdallah into a house. Al-Āḥmārī hurried off until he came to Ziyād, saying, “Indeed, the Ṭayyī gathered against me, and I could not withstand them, so I have returned to you.” Ziyād then sent for Ādi,453 as he was in the mosque, and had him arrested, saying, “Bring him to me.” ‘Ādi had been informed about Ādi’s story, so he asked, “How shall I bring you a man whom the folk have killed?” Ziyād replied, “Bring [him] to me so I may see that they have killed him.” Ādi then made an excuse, saying, “I don’t know where he is or

451. Bracketed words added from Isfahānī, Aghānī.
452. The account up to this point is also in Isfahānī, Aghānī, XVI, 7 with variants.
453. Ādi b. Ḥātim al-Ṭā‘ī was the leader of the Ṭayyī at al-Kūfah.
what he has done." At that, Ziyād imprisoned him, and everyone in the city belonging to the Yaman and the Rabī'ah and the Muḍar concerned themselves with 'Adi. They came to Ziyād, and interceded with him on 'Adi's behalf. Meanwhile, 'Abdal-lāh was taken out and hidden with the Buhtūr. He then sent word to 'Adi, "If you wish me to come out so that I would put my hand in yours, I will do so." At that, 'Adi sent word back to him, "By God, if you were right under my feet, I would not lift them from you." Ziyād then summoned 'Adi, telling him, "Indeed, I shall release you on condition that you undertake to expel 'Abdallāh from al-Kūfah for me and lead him to the mountains." 'Adi replied that he would, returned, and sent word to 'Abdallāh b. Khalifah, "Leave, and if his anger subsides, I shall speak with him about you so that you may return if God wills." Thus 'Abdallāh left for the mountains.

Ziyād was also brought Karīm b. 'Afīf al-Khath'amī, so he asked, "What is your name?" He answered, "I am Karīm b. 'Afīf." Ziyād responded, "Alas for you or woe unto you! How good is your name and the name of your father, and how evil is your action and your view." 'Afīf answered, "However, by God, you have only known my view for a short time." Ziyād then sent for the companions of Hūjir until he had collected twelve men of them in the prison.

Ziyād then summoned the leaders of the fourths, saying, "Testify against Hūjir about what he did to you." At that time the leaders of the fourths were 'Amr b. Ḫurayth in charge of the fourth of the people of al-Madinah, Khālid b. 'Urfūṭah in charge of the fourth of the Tamīm and the Ḥamdān, Qays b. al-Walīd b. 'Abd Shams b. al-Mughīrah in charge of the fourth of the Rabī'ah and the Kindah, and Abū Burdah b. Abū Mūsā in charge of the Madḥḥij and the Asad. There four testified that Hūjir had gathered crowds about him, openly abused the Caliph, and called for war against the Commander of the Faithful. They also swore that he claimed that matters would only be set right

454. The Buhtūr were a clan of the Tayyī. See Ibn Manẓūr, Lisān, IV, 47.
455. Karīm means "noble" or "generous"; 'Afīf means "decent."
456. The fourths were divisions of the Kūfān army created by Ziyād but were unrelated to the districts in the city as is often claimed.
by the family of Abū Ĥalib, that he attacked the city and drove out the official of the Commander of the Faithful, excused Abū Turāb openly and asked God's mercy on him, and disavowed Abū Turāb’s enemy and the people who fought him. They also testified that those persons who associated with him were the leaders of his companions and had views and concerns similar to his. Then Ziyād ordered them to leave. Qays b. al-Walid returned to him afterwards, saying, “I heard that when they had been escorted out, they reconsidered.” At that, Ziyād sent to the Kunāsah457 and, having purchased stubborn camels, he fastened litters upon them. Then he carried those leaders upon the camels in the public plaza from daybreak until evening, declaring, “Whoever wishes, let him reconsider.” But none of them stirred.

When Ziyād had examined the testimony of the witnesses, he said, “I do not consider this testimony to be conclusive, and I would like for there to be more than four witnesses.” (According to) Abū Mīkhnaf and al-Ĥārīth b. Ḥusayrah—Abū al-Κanūd, that is ‘Abd al-Ρaḥmān b. ‘Ubayd, and Abū Mīkhnaf—‘Abd al-Ρaḥmān b. Jundab, and Sulaymān b. Abī Rāshid—Abū al-Κanūd, these were the names of the witnesses: In the name of God, the Compassionate, the Merciful, this is what Abū Burdah b. Abī Mūsā testified against him before God, Lord of both worlds. He testified that Hujr b. ‘Adī refused obedience, withdrew from the community, cursed the Caliph, called for war and civil discord, and gathered crowds about himself, summoning them to violate the oath of allegiance (bay’ah) and depose the Commander of the Faithful, Mu‘āwiyah. In the baldest way, he also disbelieved in God, Almighty and Great. Ziyād then said, “Give similar testimony. By God, I shall certainly endeavor to cut the thread of the necks of treacherous fools.” At that the leaders of the fourths gave similar testimony to that of Abū Burdah, and there were four of them.

Ziyād then summoned the people, saying, “Give similar testimony to that of the leaders of the fourths.” When he read the document to them, the first person to stand up was Ḥunāq b.

457. The Kunāsah [rubbish heap] was the location of a camel-market in al-Kūfah.
Shuraḥbīl b. Ābī Dahm al-Taymi of the Taym Allāh b. Tha'labah, saying, “Include my name.” At that, Ziyād said, “Start with the names of Quraysh, then write the name of ‘Unāq among the witnesses, and whoever else we and the Commander of the Faithful recognize as having sincere advice and integrity.” ʻIṣāq b. Ṭalḥah b. Ṣubaydallāh then testified, and Mūsā b. Ṭalḥah, Iṣmā‘īl b. Ṭalḥah b. ‘Ubaydallāh, al-Mundhir b. al-Zubayr, ‘Umārah b. ‘Uqbah b. Abī Mu‘ayyt, ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Hannād, ‘Umar b. Sa‘d b. Abī Waqqāṣ, ʻĀmir b. Mas‘ūd b. Umayyah b. Khalaf, Muḥrīz b. Jāriyah b. Rabī‘ah b. ‘Abd al-ʻUzza b. ʻAbd Shams, ‘Ubaydallāh b. Muslim b. Shu‘bah al-Ḥadrāmī, ‘Unāq b. Shuraḥbīl b. Ābī Dahm, Wā‘il b. Ḥujr al-Ḥadrāmī, Kathīr b. Shīhāb b. Ḥuṣayn al-Ḥārithī, Qāṭān b. ʻAbdallāh b. Ḥuṣayn, al-Sārī b. Waqqāṣ al-Ḥārithī—who wrote his testimony while he was absent on duty—al-Sā‘ib b. al-Aqra‘ al-Thaqafī, Shabīb b. Rib‘ī, ʻAbdallāh b. Abī ʻAqil al-Thaqafī, Maṣqalāh b. Hubayyrah al-Shaybānī, al-Qa‘qā‘ b. Shwār al-Dhuhlī, and Shaddād b. al-Mundhir b. al-Ḥārith b. Wā‘il al-Dhuhlī, who used to be called Ibn Buzay‘ah. Ziyād said, “This one does not have a father to whom he is related. Omit him from the witnesses.” Ziyād was then told that Shaddād was the brother of al-Ḥudayn and the son of al-Mundhir. Ziyād ordered for him to be put down with his father’s name, and he was. Shaddād heard about it and said, “Woe unto me for the son of the adulteress!” Wasn’t his mother better known than his father? By God, he is only related to his mother, Sumayyah.” Ḥaḥīr b. Abjar al-ʻIjlī (was also among the witnesses). The Rabi‘ah became angry with these witnesses among the Rabi‘ah who testified, and they told them, “You testified against our friends and allies.” They answered, “We were only among the people, and many people from among their own folk testified against them.” In addition [the witnesses included] Labīd b. ʻUtārid al-Tamīmī, Muḥammad b. ʻUmayr b. ʻUtārid al-Tamīmī, Suwayd b. Abī al-Raḥmān al-Tamīmī from the Banū Sa‘d, ʻAsmā‘ b. Khārijah al-Fazārī, who used to apologize for his participation, Shāmīr b. Dī al-Jawshān al-ʻĀmirī, Shaddād and Marwān the two sons of al-Haytham the Hilālīs, Miḥṣan b. Tha‘labah from 458. That is, Ziyād.
The Events of the Year 51

among the allies of Quraysh, al-Haytham b. al-Aswad al-
Nakha‘i, who used to apologize to them, ‘Abd al-Rahmān b.
Qays al-Asadi, al-‘Hārith and Shaddād the two sons of al-Azma’
the Hamdānīs, then the Wādīs, Kurayb b. Salmah b. Yazīd al-
Ziyād also summoned al-Mukhtar b. Abī ‘Ubayd and ‘Urwah b.
al-Mughīrah b. Shu‘bāh to testify against Hūjir, but they were
evasive. (The list also included) ‘Umar b. Qays Dhū al-Liḥyah
and Hānī b. Abī Hayyah, the two Wādīs.

Thus seventy men testified against Hūjir. Ziyād then said,
“Eliminate everyone except those who have been known for
[their] lineage and uprightness in their faith.” They did so until
they had reached this number. The testimony of ‘Abdallāh b.
al-Ḥajjāj al-Taghlibī was eliminated. The testimony of these
witnesses was recorded on a scroll, then Ziyād presented it to
sent them both to the prisoners, ordering them both to take
them out. Shurayḥ b. al-Ḥārith, the judge, and Shurayḥ b. Hānī’
al-Ḥārithī were also recorded among the witnesses. As far as
Shurayḥ the judge is concerned, he said, “Ziyād asked me
about Hūjir, and I told him that he would fast and worship at
night.” As far as Shurayḥ b. Hānī’ al-Ḥārithī is concerned, he
used to say, “I was not a witness. I had heard that my testi-
mony had been recorded, so I said it was a lie and rebuked
[Ziyād].”

Wā’il b. Hūjir and Kathīr b. Shihāb came and brought out the
folk in the evening, and the commander of the police accompa-
nied them until he took them out of al-‘Ufah. When they
reached the cemetery of ‘Arzam, Qabiṣah b. Dubay‘ah al-‘Absī
looked at his house, which was in the [district of the] cemetery
of ‘Arzam, and there were his daughters looking down. Qabiṣah
asked Wā’il and Kathīr, “Allow me to counsel my family.”
They did so. When he drew near them, as they were weeping,
he said nothing to them for a while. Then he told them to be si-
lent, so they were. He then said, “Fear God, Almighty and
Great, and be steadfast, for I hope for one of two happy endings

from my Lord in this destination of mine: either martyrdom which is happiness, or coming back to you in good health. Indeed, the One Who has been providing for you and suffices me for your provisions is God, Most High, Who is alive and does not die. I hope that He will not neglect you, and that He will preserve me along with you.” Then he departed, passing by his folk. When his folk began to pray to God for his well-being, he said, “That makes no difference to me. The destruction of my folk is more serious than my circumstance”—meaning, “since they aren’t helping me.” He was hoping that they would rescue him.

[According to] Abū Mikhnaf—al-Naṣr b. Šāliḥ al-‘Absī— ‘Ubaydallāh b. al-Ḥurr al-Ju’fī: By God, I was standing at the door of al-Sāri b. Abī Waqqās when they went past with Ḥujr and his friends. I asked, “Are there not ten groups to rescue these, nor five?” At that, he began to lament, and none of the people answered me. They took them away and brought them to the Ghariyūn where Shurayh b. Ḥānî’ caught up with them with a letter. He told Kathîr, “Deliver this letter of mine to the Commander of the Faithful.” Kathîr asked, “What is in it?” Shurayh replied, “Don’t ask me. It contains something I need.” At that, Kathîr refused, saying, “I don’t want to bring the Commander of the Faithful a letter the contents of which I do not know. Perhaps it might not be agreeable to him.” Shurayh then brought it to Wâ’il b. Ḥujr, who accepted it from him. Then they took them away until they brought them to Marj ‘Adhrâ’, which was twelve miles from Damascus.640

Those Whom Ziyâd Sent to Mu’âwiyyah


460. See Yaqût, Mu’jam, IV, 488.
from the Banū Minqar, and 'Abdallāh b. Ḥāwiyah al-Sa'dī from
the Banū Tamim.

They took them away until they halted at Marj 'Adhrā',
where they were imprisoned. Then Ziyād sent two other men
after them escorted by 'Āmir b. al-Aswad al-ʾIjli—Utbaḥ b. al-
Akhnas, from the Banū Sa’d b. Bakr b. Hawāzin, and Sa’d b.
Nimrān al-Hamdānī (then al-Nāʾīṭi). Thus there were fourteen
men. Mu'āwiya then sent to Wā’il b. Ḥuǧr and Katḥir b. Shi-
hāb, admitted them both, opened up their letter, and read it to
the Syrians. It said:

In the name of God, the Compassionate and Merciful.
To the Servant of God, Mu'āwiya, the Commander of the
Faithful, from Ziyād b. Abī Sufyān. Now then, indeed God
blessed the Commander of the Faithful well, deceived his
enemies for him, and saved him the trouble of one who
wronged him. Indeed, oppressors belonging to this Turā-
biyyah, Sabāʾiyyah, whose leader is Ḥuǧr b. 'Adī, opposed
the Commander of the Faithful, withdrew from the com-
munity of Muslims, and declared war on us. God has made
us victorious over them, and enabled us to deal with them.
I summoned the best people of the city, their notables and
those among them possessed of maturity and faith. They
testified against them concerning what they believed and
did. I have sent them to the Commander of the Faithful,
and have written the [names of] the upright witnesses of
the people of the city, and the best of them, at the bottom
of this letter of mine.

When he had read the letter and the testimony of the wit-
tnesses against them, Mu'āwiya asked, "What do you think
about this group whose own folk testify against them with
what you heard?" Yazīd b. Asad al-Bajali told him, "I think
that you should disperse them among the villages of Syria, so it
would save you the trouble of dealing with their sedition."
Wā’il b. Ḥuǧr also presented the letter of Shurayḥ b. Hāni' to
Mu'āwiya, so he read it. It said:

In the name of God, the Compassionate and Merciful.
To the Servant of God, Mu'āwiya, Commander of the
Faithful, from Shurayh b. Hāni'. Now then, I have heard that Ziyād wrote to you concerning my testimony against Ḥujr b. 'Adi, and indeed my testimony about Ḥujr b. 'Adi is that he is among those who perform the ṣalāt, give charity [zakāt], always perform the rites of pilgrimage [ḥajj] and the 'umrah annually, command good and forbid evil, and [is among those] whose blood and property are forbidden. So kill him if you like, and let him alone if you like.

Muʿāwiya read Surayh's letter to Wā'il b. Ḥujr and Kathir, and then said, "I only saw this after he had removed himself from your testimony." The folk were thus imprisoned at Maṣr 'Adhra' while Muʿāwiya wrote to Ziyād:

Now then, I have understood what you related accurately about the matter of Ḥujr and his companions and the testimony against him from your side. I have examined it, and sometimes I thought killing them would be better than leaving them alone, and sometimes I thought granting them pardon would be better than killing them. So Goodby.

At that, Ziyād wrote back to him by means of Yazīd b. Ḥujayyah b. Rabī'ah al-Taymi:

Now then, I have read your letter and understood your views about Ḥujr and his companions. I was astonished at your doubt about the matter concerning them, since those who are more knowledgeable about them have testified against them with what you have heard. If you have any desire for this city, do not send Ḥujr and his companions back to me.

Yazīd b. Ḥujayyah advanced until he went past the prisoners at 'Adhrā', saying, "O you! By God, I don't see your acquittal, and I have brought a letter calling for slaughter. Instruct me then to do whatever you like, whatever you think would be of advantage to you. I will do it for you and say it." At that, Ḥujr

461. The 'umrah, or minor pilgrimage consists of the rites near the Ka'bah, which were customarily performed as a separate ritual during the month of Raṭjab. See El', s. v. 'Umra.
said, "Tell Muʿāwiyah that we preserve our allegiance. We don't seek to abrogate it, and we will not abrogate it. On the contrary, enemies and untrustworthy people testified against us." When Yazid brought the letter to Muʿāwiyah, he read it. Yazid also told him of Ḥujr's speech. Muʿāwiyah then remarked, "Ziyād is more reliable than Ḥujr as far as we are concerned." At that, 'Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Umar b. Umm al-Ḥakam al-Thaqafi—it is also said, 'Uthmān b. 'Umayr al-Thaqafi—said, "Scrap it! Scrap it!" And Muʿāwiyah responded to him, "Don't encourage reconciliation!" The Syrians went out without understanding what Muʿāwiyah and 'Abd al-Rahmān had said. Coming to al-Nuʿmān b. Bashir, they told him what Ibn Umm al-Hakam had said. Al-Nuʿmān explained, "They are as good as dead."

'Āmir b. al-Aswad al-ʿIjlī, who was at 'Adhrā', approached desiring to inform Muʿāwiyah about the two (additional) men whom Ziyād had sent. As he turned to leave, Ḥujr b. Ḥadī stood up before him, shackled with chains, saying, "O 'Āmir, listen to me. Tell Muʿāwiyah that my blood is forbidden to him, and inform him that we were given a guarantee of safe-conduct and that we have become reconciled to him. Tell him also to fear God and examine our case." When 'Āmir repeated similar words back to him, Ḥujr repeated it to him several times, while the latter would repeat it back. 'Āmir then said, "I have understood you, you have repeated [it] many times." Ḥujr responded, "I did not speak dishonorably, while he blames me." Indeed, by God, you will be preferred and rewarded, while Ḥujr will be brought and killed. I shall not blame you if you find my speech burdensome. Take your leave." At that, he seemed to be ashamed and remonstrated, "No, by God, that was not my meaning. I shall certainly give notice and make the effort." He seemed to assume that he would do it, while Ḥujr refused to believe him.

'Āmir entered Muʿāwiyah's presence, and informed him about the matter of the two men. Yazīd b. Asad al-Bajali rose

462. 'Abd al-Rahmān was probably telling Muʿāwiyah to tear up Ziyād's letter.
463. Cairo reads: "does he blame me?"
saying, “O Commander of the Faithful, give me my two cousins.” Jarir b. 'Abdallâh had written about them, “Two men belonging to my folk from the people of the community, men of sound views. An untrustworthy slanderer libeled them to Ziyâd, so he sent them both in the group of Kûfâns whom he sent to the Commander of the Faithful. They are among those who do not undertake any innovation in Islam nor do wrong to the Caliph.” That was to their advantage with the Commander of the Faithful. When Yazîd asked about them, Mu'âwiyyah remembered the letter of Jarir, so he said, “Your cousin, Jarir, has written to me about them both, praising them charitably, and he deserves to have his word trusted and his sincere advice accepted. you have asked me about your cousins, so you may have them both.” Wâ'il b. Hûjr also asked for al-Arqâm, so Mu'âwiyyah let him go. Abû al-'A'war al-Sulamî asked for 'Ut-bah b. al-Akhnâs, so Mu'âwiyyah gave him to him. Ưmrah b. Mâlik al-Hamdânî asked for Sa'd b. Nimrân al-Hamdânî, so Mu'âwiyyah gave him to him. Ûbah b. Maslamah also interceded with him for Ibn Ưawiyyah, so Mu'âwiyyah released him.

At that, Mâlik b. Hubayrâ al-Sakûnî rose addressing Mu'âwiyyah, “O Commander of the Faithful, leave my cousin, Hûjr, to me.” But Mu'âwiyyah answered, “Indeed, your cousin, Hûjr, is the leader of the folk, and I fear that if I release him he would corrupt my city for me. Tomorrow we must send you and your friends off to him in Iraq.” So Mâlik told him, “By God, you were not just to me, O Mu'âwiyyah. I fought your cousin along with you. I faced them in a battle like that of Šiffin until your side was victorious, your heel raised up, and you did not fear misfortunes. Then I asked you for my cousin, and you assaulted me and read into what I said things that are of no advantage to me. You were afraid of what you alleged the consequences of the misfortunes [would be].” Then he left and sat at home.

Mu'âwiyyah then sent Hudbah b. Fiyyâd al-Qudâ'î of the Banû Salâmân b. Sa'd, al-ハウスyân b. 'Abdallah al-Kilâbî, and Abû Sharîf al-Baddî, and they brought the prisoners in the evening. When al-Khat'hâmî saw al-A'war, he said, “Half of us will be killed and half saved.” Sa'd b. Nimrân said, “O God, make me one of those who are saved, as long as You are satisfied with
me.” ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Ḥassān al-‘Anazī said, “O God, make me one of those whose disgrace honors You, as long as you are satisfied with me. How often I presented myself for killing. God thus has willed what He desired.”

The messenger of Mu‘āwiyyah then came to them with orders to release six and to kill eight, telling them, “We have been ordered to let you disavow ‘Alī and curse him. If you do so, we shall release you; and if you refuse, we shall kill you. The Commander of the Faithful also declares that he has been allowed to shed your blood by the testimony of the people of your city against you, although he has refrained from that. So renounce this man, and we shall release you.” They replied, “O God, we shall not do that.” He then ordered for their graves to be dug, and their shrouds to be brought. They spent the entire night worshipping, so, when morning came, Mu‘āwiyyah’s men said, “Hey you! We saw you last night prolonging worship and doing it well, so inform us of what you have to say about ‘Uthmān.” They replied, “He was the first who deviated in judgment and acted wrongly.” At that, Mu‘āwiyyah’s men declared, “The Commander of the Faithful knew you better.” They then stood up in front of the prisoners saying, “Denounce this man!” They replied, “We vindicate him instead, and denounce whoever denounces him.” At that, every man took one of them in order to kill him. When Qabīṣah b. Ḕubay‘ah fell into the hands of Abū Sharīfah al-Baddī, he told the latter, “The [former] hatred has been changed to peace between my folk and your folk, so let someone else kill me.” So Abū Sharīfah answered him, “Kinship helped you,” and took al-Ḥaḍramī and killed him, while al-Quḍā‘ī killed Qabīṣah b. Ḕubay‘ah.

Then Ḫūrī told them, “Leave me alone so I may perform ablutions.” They told him to do so. When he finished, he told them, “Leave me alone so I can make two prostrations. I certainly swear to God that I have never performed ablutions without making two prostrations.” They told him to worship, and he did so. Then he stopped, saying, “By God, I never worshipped more quickly than this, and if you think that I have no anxiety about death, I would have liked to prolong it.” Then he added, “O God, we appeal to You for help against our community, since the Kūfans have testified against us, and since the
Syrians are killing us. However, by God, if you killed me here, I would be the first Muslim horseman to perish in this valley, and the first Muslim man at whom its dogs barked." When al-A'war Hudbah b. Fiyād strode to him with his sword, Hujr's sinews trembled, and al-A'war declared, "Certainly not! You claimed that you were not anxious about death. I will leave you, so renounce your companions." But Hujr replied, "Why shouldn't I be anxious, since I see a grave dug, a shroud spread out, and a sword unsheathed. By God, if I were anxious about killing I would not say that which angers the Lord." At that, al-A'war killed him, and they began to kill them one by one until they had killed six.

‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Hassān al-'Anazī and Karīm b. 'Affīf al-Khath'āmī then said, "Send us to the Commander of the Faithful, and we shall say what he does about this man." When they sent to Mu‘āwiyah informing him of their statement, he sent word back to them, "Bring both of them to me." When they had entered his presence, al-Khath'āmī exclaimed, "God! God! O Mu‘āwiyah, indeed, you will be transported from this transitory abode to the eternal abode hereafter, then questioned about what you hoped to gain by killing us and why you shed our blood." Mu‘āwiyah inquired, "What do you say about 'Ali?" He replied, "I say what you do about him," adding, "Shall I renounce the faith of 'Ali who used to worship God along with it?" He then fell silent, and Mu‘āwiyah did not want to answer him. Shāmīr b. 'Abdallāh of the Banū Quhāfah got up, asking, "O Commander of the Faithful, give me my cousin." Mu‘āwiyah replied, "You have him, except I am going to imprison him for a month." Shāmīr would send word to Mu‘āwiyah every two days and intercede with him, and the latter told him, "Indeed, I would think you were precious for Iraq if the likes of you were among them." Then Shāmīr brought him up again, so Mu‘āwiyah said, "We have commuted your cousin’s sentence for you." He then summoned al-Khath'āmī and released him on condition that he would not enter al-Kūfah as long as he was ruler. Mu‘āwiyah then said, "Choose whichever Arab land you would prefer for me to send you to." Al-Khath'āmī chose Mosul. He used to say, "If Mu‘āwiyah
should die, I would come to the city." But he died a month before Mu‘awiya.

Then Mu‘awiya turned to ‘Abd al-Rahmān al-‘Anazi, and asked him, “O brother of the Rabī‘ah, what do you say about ‘Alī?” He replied, “Let me alone, and don’t question me. That would be better for you.” Mu‘awiya rejoined, “By God, I shall not leave you alone until you tell me about him.” ‘Abd al-Rahmān declared, “I testify that he was one of those who frequently remember God, order what is right, stand up for justice, and forgive the people.” Mu‘awiya continued, “What then do you say about ‘Uthmān?” He replied, “He was the first to open the gate of injustice and lock the gates of righteousness.” Mu‘awiya declared, “You have condemned yourself.” ‘Abd al-Rahmān answered, “No, I have killed you instead.”

None of the Rabi‘ah in the valley would speak when Shamir al-Khath‘ami talked about Karim b. ‘Afīf al-Khath‘ami, and none of Shamir’s folk would speak to him about Karim. Mu‘awiya then sent ‘Abd al-Rahmān to Ziyād, and wrote to him, “Now then, indeed, this al-‘Anazi is the worst one you sent, so give him the punishment he deserves, and kill him in the worst way.” When he was brought to Ziyād, Ziyād sent him to Quss al-Nātif, and he was buried alive there.

When al-‘Anazi and al-Khath‘ami were transported to Mu‘awiya, al-‘Anazi had said to Ḥujr, “O Ḥujr, may God not take you away. What an excellent brother of Islam you are.” Meanwhile al-Khath‘ami said, “Don’t be distant, and don’t be deprived, for you have commanded good and forbidden evil.” Then they were taken away, while Ḥujr followed them with his eyes, saying, “Sufficient for death was a cutter of the rope of relationships.” Utbah b. al-Akhnas and Sa’d b. Nimrān were taken away a few days after Ḥujr and released.

**Ḥujr’s Companions Who Were Killed**

Ḥujr b. ‘Adi, Sharik b. Shaddād al-Ḥadramī, Ṣayfī b. Fasil al-Shaybānī, Qabiṣah b. Ḍubay‘ah al-‘Absī, Muhriz b. Shihāb al-Sa‘dī, then al-Minqārī, Kidām b. Hayyān al-‘Anazi, ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Ḥassān al-‘Anazi whom he sent to Ziyād so he was
buried alive at Quss al-Nātif. Thus there were seven who were killed, enshrouded, and prayed over. It is alleged that when al-Ḥasan heard about the killing of Ḥujr and his companions, he inquired, “Did they pray over them, bury them, and make them face towards the qiblah?” Upon being told that they had, he remarked, “They were defeated by them, by the Lord of the Kaʿbah.”

**Hujr’s Companions Who Were Saved**


When Muʿāwiyyah had refused to release Ḥujr to Malik b. Hubayrah al-Sakūnī—many of Mālik’s folk of the Kindah and al-Sakūn, and many people of the Yaman, had gathered to him—he said, “By God, we can do without Muʿāwiyyah more than Muʿāwiyyah can do without us. We would find a replacement for him among his folk, while he would not find a replacement for us among the people. Set out for his man, and free him.” At that, they proceeded to travel, certain that Ḥujr and his companions were at ‘Adhrā’ and that they had not been killed. Thus their killers met them, having just left there. When they saw Mālik among the people, the killers supposed, however, that he had brought them to rescue Ḥujr from them. Mālik asked, “Why are you coming?” and was told, “The prisoners repented, and we have come to inform Muʿāwiyyah.” Mālik did not answer them, and proceeded towards ‘Adhrā’. When someone who came from there met him, he informed Mālik that the prisoners had been killed. At that, Mālik said, “Bring the folk to me.” The cavalry followed Mālik and his men, and, outdistancing them, they entered Muʿāwiyyah’s presence. When they told him the news—what Mālik b. Hubayrah and the people who were with him had come for—Muʿāwiyyah told them, “Be

464. See above, n. 110.
silent! Rather it is a passion that he feels in himself, and is about to die down."

Mālik returned, settling in his residence, and he did not come to Mu‘āwiyyah. Mu‘āwiyyah sent to him, but he refused to come. When night came, Mu‘āwiyyah sent one hundred thousand dirhams to Mālik, saying to him, "The Commander of the Faithful is prevented from allowing you to intercede with him about your cousin except [out of] sympathy for you and your friends, lest they resume another war for you. If Ḥujr b. Ḥaḍir had survived, I fear that he would have caused you and your friends to go to him, and that would have been an affliction for the Muslims which would be more serious than killing Ḥujr." So Mālik accepted it and was in good spirits; coming to Mu‘āwiyyah on the following day, he entered the latter's presence with throngs of his folk, and Mu‘āwiyyah was pleased with him. (According to) Abū Mikhnaf—'Abd al-Mālik b. Nawfal b. Masāḥiq: 'Ā'ishah sent 'Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Ḥārith b. Ḥishām to Mu‘āwiyyah concerning Ḥujr and his friends. Upon arriving after Mu‘āwiyyah had killed them, 'Abd al-Rahmān asked him, "Where did the forbearance of Abu Sufyān disappear from you?" Mu‘āwiyyah replied, "It vanished from me when mild people like you among my folk abandoned me, and Ibn Sumayyah464 convinced me, so I acquiesced."

(According to) Abū Mikhnaf—'Abd al-Malik b. Nawfal—'Ā'ishah: If changing matters would not have made them worse than before, we would have done differently with regard to the killing of Ḥujr. By God, I used to know him as a Muslim who performed the pilgrimage and the 'umrah.466

(According to) Abū Mikhnaf—'Abd al-Mālik b. Nawfal—Abū Saʿīd al-Maqburi: When Mu‘āwiyyah made the pilgrimage, he passed by 'Ā'ishah, so he asked permission to enter her presence, and she admitted him. When he sat down, she asked him, "O Mu‘āwiyyah, do you trust me not to conceal from you one who would kill you?" He replied, "I have entered a safe

464. That is, Ziyād. As Mu‘āwiyyah is not likely to have used the derogatory "Ibn Sumayyah," this account appears to be tendentious.
466. See above, n. 461.
467. Cairo reads: Saʿīd. He was Saʿīd b. Abī Saʿīd.
house.” She went on, “O Mu‘awiyah, don’t you fear God because of the killing of Ḥujr and his companions?” He answered, “It was not I who killed them, rather those who testified against them killed them.”

(According to) Abū Mikhnaf—Zakariyyā‘ b. Zā’idah—Abū Iṣḥāq: I was around people who were saying, “The first disgrace in al-Kūfah was the death of al-Ḥasan b. ‘Alī, the killing of Ḥujr b. ‘Adi, and the false claim of Ziyād to affinity [with the family of Abū Sufyān].” Abū Mikhnaf (said): It was claimed that at his death, Mu‘awiyah said, “My day was three times as long because of Ibn Adbar,” that is, Ḥujr.

(According to) Abū Mikhnaf—al-Ṣaq‘ab b. Zuhayr—al-Ḥasan: Mu‘awiyah had four flaws, and any one of them would have been a serious offense: [his] appointment of troublemakers for this community so that he stole its rule without consultation with its members, while there was a remnant of the Companions and possessors of virtue among them; his appointment of his son as his successor after him, a drunkard [and] a winebibber who wears silk and plays ṭunbūrs,468 his allegation about Ziyād, while the Messenger of God has said, “The child belongs to the bed, and the adulterer should be stoned,”469 and his killing of Ḥujr. Woe unto him twice for Ḥujr and his companions.”

Hind bt. Zayd b. Makhrāmah al-ʾAnsārī said, while she was escorting (the funeral procession), mourning Ḥujr:470

Rise, O shining moon!

Look! Do you see Ḥujr departing,

Departing to Mu‘awiyah son of Ḥarb,

to be killed by him, as the amīr claimed?

---

468. A ṭunbūr was a long-necked, stringed instrument with a small sound chest. See El', Supp., s.v. Tunbūr.

469. This ḥadith is often cited with regard to Mu‘awiyah’s recognition of Ziyād as the illegitimate son of Abū Sufyān and Sumayyah. See Ibn ‘Abd Rabbihi, ‘Iqd, V, 5; Lichtenstädter, “From Particularism to Unity,” 225; Pellat, Ḥizb, 84.

470. These lines are also in Isfahānī, Aghānī, XVI, 10; and Mas‘ūdī, Murūj, V, 15.
The Events of the Year 51

The tyrants sported their power after Ḥujr, and al-Khawarnaq and al-Sadir were pleasant for them,471

While the lands became barren, as though clouds full of rain do not revive them.

O Ḥujr, Ḥujr of the Banū Ḍādi, may safety and happiness receive you.

I fear for you what destroyed Ḍādi,472 while an old man is roaring in Damascus.

He thinks killing the best is all right for him, who has a wazir from the worst people.

If only Ḥujr had died a [natural] death, and had not been slaughtered like camels are slaughtered.

If he should perish then every leader of folk of the world will come to destruction.

Al-Kindiyyah said, lamenting Ḥujr—it is also said that the Anṣāri woman was the one to say this:

The tears of my eye are continuous rain that falls weeping for Ḥujr unstinting.473

If the bow were upon his captivity, al-Aʿwār would not impose the sword on him.

The poet also said, inciting the Banū Hind of the Banū Shaybān against Qays b. ʿUbād, when he slandered Ṣayfī b. Fasil:

471. Al-Khawarnaq and al-Sadir were famous pre-Islamic palaces in the neighborhood of al-Ḥirah. Al-Khawarnaq was about one mile east of modern Najaf. See Yāqūt, Muʿjam, II, 490–94, III, 59–61, Ep, s. v. al-Khawarnaq.

472. Isfahānī, Aghānī reads: "I fear for you the assault of the family of Ḥarb." 473. The text reads: mā ṭuqṭiru, Cairo reads: mā ṭafturu, "unabating."
Ibn Fasil appealed, "O for Murrah!" an appeal, and the tip of the sword encountered the palm of a hand and a wrist.

So incite the Banu Hind whenever you encounter them, and address Ghiyath and his son saying,

"Let Qutaylah weep for the Banu Hind, just as the wife of Sayfi wept while she arranged a funeral."

This Ghiyath is Ibn 'Imran b. Murrah b. al-Harith b. Dubb b. Murrah b. Dhul b. Shayban who was a noble, while Qutaylah was the sister of Qays b. 'Ubaid. The latter lived until he fought alongside Ibn al-Ash'ath in battle. Hawshab then told al-Hajjaj b. Yusuf, "There is among us a man who is a leader of seditions and risings against the government. There was never a sedition in Iraq without his being eagerly involved in it. He is a Turabi who curses 'Uthman. He has rebelled with Ibn al-Ash'ath and participated with him in all his battles. He incited the people until, when God destroyed them, he came and sat in his house." When al-Hajjaj sent for him and beheaded him, the sons of his father said to the family of Hawshab, "But you certainly slandered us." And they replied, "You certainly slandered our friend instead."

Abu Mikhnaf (said): 'Abdallah b. Khalifah al-Ta'i had accompanied Hujr b. 'Adi. When Ziyad sought 'Abdallah, he dropped out of sight. Ziyad then sent the police for him, who at that time were people of the Hamra', and they arrested him. At that, his sister, al-Nawar, went out saying, "O kinfolk of Tayyi! Do you surrender your spearheads and your tongue? 'Abdallah b. Khalifah!" The Ta'is then assaulted the police, struck them, and snatched 'Abdallah b. Khalifah from them. When the police returned to Ziyad and informed him, the latter fell upon 'Adi b. Hatim while he was in the mosque, saying, "Bring me 'Abdallah b. Khalifah." 'Adi asked, "What's the matter with him?" When Ziyad told him, he said, "This is something that happened in a tribal district I do not know." Ziyad demanded, "By God, bring him to me." 'Adi retorted, "No, by God, I shall never bring him to you. I brought you my cousin whom you
The Events of the Year 51  157

killed. By God, if he were beneath my feet, I would not lift them off of him." At that, Ziyād ordered 'Adī to the prison.

Every Yamanī or Raba’ī in al-Kūfah then came to Ziyād and interceded with him, saying, "You do this to 'Adī b. Ḥātim, a Companion of the Messenger of God." Ziyād replied, "I would release him under one condition." They asked, "What is it?" He said, "That his cousin should leave me and not enter al-Kūfah as long as I have authority here." When 'Adī was informed of that, he agreed and sent for 'Abdallāh b. Khalīfah, saying, "O my nephew, indeed this [man] has been insistent in your case, and has refused everything except your exile from your city as long as he has authority. So get to the two mountains." 474 At that, 'Abdallāh b. Khalīfah left and began to write to 'Adī, and 'Adī began to encourage him, so 'Abdallāh wrote to him:

I remembered Laylā and youths in the afternoon
and the memory of childhood is a torment for one who remembers.

Youth passes away, so I missed its hardship
and, O, what passion you had in it, after it fled away.

Then cease remembrance of youth and its loss
and its remnants 475 when it parts from you, and desist.

And weep for friends when they have all gone,
while they do not find a source except the spring of death.

Their fates summoned them and he whose day approached
of the people, so know that it would not be postponed.

Those were my adherents and refuge
the day when I face 476 one whose burning is memorable.

And I did not desire after them as a diversion,
anything worldly, nor to have my life prolonged.

474. That is, Mts. Ajah and Salmah of the Jabal Ṭā’ī in northern Arabia.
475. The text reads: āsārahu, Cairo reads: āthārahu, "its vestiges."
476. The text reads: ulla; C reads: algā, "encounter."
I say, "By God, I shall not forget to remember them for all time, unless I die and am buried."

Peace upon the people of ‘Adhrā’, redoubled from God, and let the cumulus clouds give to drink,

And Ḥujr receive in them mercy from God,
For Ḥujr has pleased God and is excused.

And may incessant torrents and perpetual rain continue upon the grave of Ḥujr until he is summoned to be assembled.

So, O Ḥujr, who will bleed the throats of the horses," and of the aggressive king whenever he acts unjustly,

[150] And who will preach the truth after you, speaking, about piety, and who, if injustice was mentioned, changed it?

So what a good brother of Islam you were! And I wish for you to be granted immortality and to be delighted.

You used to give the sword its due in the war, and acknowledge good and disavow evil.

O our two brothers of Humaym, you were both protected, and prepared easily for good works, so receive the good news!

O my two Kindifi brothers, receive the good news! for you were both kept alive in order to be told good news.

O brothers of Ḥadramawt and Ghālib and Shaybān, you met an easy reckoning.

477. That is, lead them into battle.
You were fortunate, and I did not hear [anything] more proper than your dispute at the time of great death, or more steadfast.

I shall weep for all of you as long as a star shines and the dove coos and rustles in the depth of both valleys.

So I said, not being unjust, "O Gawth son of Tayy'i, when I was afraid that I would be made to go among you, Did you have the opportunity and not defend your brother? while he defended himself until he leaned over, then collapsed.

You separated from me, and I was left deserted, as if I were a stranger squeezed with hands.

Who do you have like me at every attack? and who do you have like me when courage appears?

And who do you have like me when war starts, while the one who risks his life was active in it and girded?"

So here am I, whose dwelling is in the mountains of Tayyi', exiled, and if God willed, He could change it.

My enemy exiled me unjustly from the place to which I migrated, and I was content with what God willed and decreed.

My folk surrendered me for no crime, as if they were not my folk and kinsmen.

If I were accustomed to a dwelling in the mountains of Tayyi', and it was a dwelling for a short while and a presence,

I would not be afraid that I would be considered a foreigner, may God revile whoever reviles Him, and multiply it.
May God revile the Ḥadrami foe, Wā’il
and may they suffer annihilation from the abundant spearheads.

And may the folk suffer destruction who took sides against us and told a shocking lie.

So folk, do not put me with Gawth son of Ṭayyi’, because their fate made them miserable and was changed.

I don’t attack them on a caparisoned [horse] and I don’t scatter dust upon them at Kuwayfah.⁴⁷⁸

Say to my friend, if you set out heading eastwards, Jadilah and the two communities, Ma’n and Buḥtur,

And Nabhan and al-Afnā’ from the root of Ṭayyi’, “Am I not a strong possessor of wealth among you?

Do you not remember the battle-day of ‘Udhayb, when my strongest oath before you was that I would never be seen turning back?

And my attack against Mihrān, while the group was undefended, and my killing of the heroic, death-defying armband wearer?

And on the day the battle of Jalūlā’ occurred, I was not blamed, and the victories of the battle-day Nihāwān and Tustar.

And you forget about me on the battle-day of the water hole, while the lances were broken in their shoulders at Șiffin.

May his Lord punish ‘Adi b. Ḥātim for me, for my rejection and my disappointment, an ample punishment.

⁴⁷⁸. “Little Kūfah” was a place near Bazīqiyā in central Iraq. See Ibn Manzūr, Lisān, IX, 312; Yāqūt, Mu’jam, IV, 331.
Do you forget my reckless bravery, O son of Ḥātim?
   In the evening your aggressiveness did not help you
   against Ḥidhmir. 479

I defended you against the folk until they weakened;
   I was the most grim, the strongest adversary.

They fled and did not stay where I was, as if
   they considered me a lion lurking in the reed thicket.

I assisted you when [those] near withdrew and [those]
   distant fled, and I was made to achieve victory single-
   handed.

So my repayment [is] that I am deprived among you,
   imprisoned, and that I am disgraced and captured.

How many promises I have from you that you will return to
   me,
   but [even] a fox cannot escape the appointed time with re-
   gard to me."

Then I began to tend the old she-camel for a while, and
   sometimes
   I would summon to drink, if the shepherds summoned to
   drink.

As if I have not ridden a racehorse for a raid,
   and have not left the armored opponent thrown to the
   ground,

And I have not opposed attacking cavalry with the sword,
   when he who retreats goes backwards, then pulls back and
   forth,

And I have not spurred on the racer right after the troop,
   heading for the heights of Sijās 480 and Abhar,

479. Cairo reads: "Ḥizmir."
480. Sijās is the territory between Hamadhān and Abhar.
And I have not frightened the deer from me in an attack, like the watering-place for the she-camel,\(^{481}\) then I descend victorious,

And I have not been seen among the cavalry that thrusts at each other with lances, at Qazwin\(^{482}\) or Sharwin,\(^{483}\) nor have raided Kundur.\(^{484}\)

And that [was] a time the praiseworthiness of which has departed from me, and what was known about it became unknown for me.

So my folk would not stay away, even if I were absent, and were lost among them and hidden,

And [there is] no good in the world and life after them, even though I were distant of abode, held back from them.

But 'Abdallāh b. Khalifah died in the two mountains before Ziyād did.

'Ubaydah al-Kindi, then al-Baddi, said, reproaching Muḥammad b. al-Ash'ath for his abandonment of Ḥujr:

You surrendered your uncle, you did not fight in front of him in fear, and, but for you, he would have been unassailable.

You killed an envoy of the family of Muḥammad, and you stripped off his swords and armor.

If you were from Asad, you would understand my nobility, and consider the family of al-Hubāb to be an intercessor for me.

---

\(^{481}\) *Al-ablām* is a she-camel that has not yet had a child. See Ibn Manẓūr, *Lisān*, XII, 54.

\(^{482}\) Qazwin is a town and its district northwest of al-Rayy (Tehrān) and south of Gilān. See *EI*³, s.v. Kazwin.

\(^{483}\) The Jībāl Sharwin is on the western border of Ṭabaristān, next to Gilān. See Yāqūt, *Mu’jam*, III, 283–84.

\(^{484}\) There was a village called Kundur near Qazwin. See Yāqūt, *Mu’jam*, IV, 309.
In this year Ziyād sent al-Rabi’ b. Ziyād al-Ḥārithi as governor of Khurasān after the death of al-Ḥakam b. ‘Amr al-Ghifāri. Al-Ḥakam had appointed Anas b. Abī Unās to succeed him in his jurisdiction after his death. This Anas was the one who led the prayer over al-Ḥakam when he died. Al-Ḥakam was buried in the house of Khalīd b. ‘Abdallāh, the brother of Khulayd b. ‘Abdallāh al-Ḥanafī. Al-Ḥakam had written to Ziyād about his appointment of Anas, so Ziyād dismissed Anas and put Khulayd b. ‘Abdallāh al-Ḥanafī in his place. I was told by ‘Umar—‘Ali b. Muḥammad: When Ziyād dismissed Anas and put Khulayd b. ‘Abdallāh al-Ḥanafī in his place, Anas said:

Who will tell Ziyād about me?

ambling on, the courier [barīd] trots with it.

Do you dismiss me and nourish Khulayd?

Ḥanīfah has found what it wants.

Help yourselves to the Yamāmah⁴⁸⁵ and cultivate it,

for the first and last of you are slaves.⁴⁸⁶

Ziyād put Khulayd in charge for a month, then dismissed him and put Rabi’ b. Ziyād al-Ḥārithi in charge of Khurasān at the beginning of this year. The people moved with their families to Khurasān and settled there. Then Ziyād dismissed al-Rabi’.

I was told by ‘Umar—‘Ali—Maslamah b. Muḥārib and ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Abān al-Qurashi: Al-Rabi’ reached Khurasān and conquered Balkh peacefully, since they had closed it after al-Aḥnaf b. Qays made peace with them. He also conquered Quhistān⁴⁸⁷ by force. There were “Turks”⁴⁸⁸ in its districts, so he killed (some of) them and put (the others) to flight. One of them

---

⁴⁸⁵. The Yamāmah is the region in central Arabia from which the Banū Ḥanifah had come. See EI, s.v. al-Yamāma.
⁴⁸⁶. The Banū Ḥanifah were farmers in the Yamāmah, but Muʿāwiyyah is said to have confiscated land near al-Qaṭāʾi in the Yamāmah which he had cultivated by four thousand slaves. See Ibn al-Athīr, Kāmil, IV, 201.
⁴⁸⁷. Quhistān is the mountainous region south of Nishāpūr in central Iran. See EP, s.v. Kūhistān.
⁴⁸⁸. These “Turks” were probably Hephthalites from Bādghis, Harat, and Pushang. See M. A. Shaban, Abbāsid Revolution, 32; and EP, s. v. Atīla.
who survived was Nizak Ṭarkhān, whom Qutaybah b. Muslim killed when he was governor. I was told by 'Umar—'Ali: Al-Rabi' campaigned and crossed the river accompanied by his servant, Farrūkh, and his slave-girl, Sharīfah. He plundered and returned safely, whereupon he set Farrūkh free. Al-Ḥakam b. 'Amr had crossed the river before him during his governorship, but did not conquer anything.

I was told by 'Umar—'Ali b. Muḥammad: The first Muslim to drink from the river was a mawla of al-Ḥakam who scooped it out with his shield. Then he handed it to al-Ḥakam, so he drank, made his ablutions, and performed two prostrations beyond the river. He was the first of the people who did that, then he returned.

In this year Yazīd b. Mu'awiyah led the people in the pilgrimage. Ahmad b. Thābit told me that according to whoever recounted it according to Ishāq b. Ḵāṣā according to Ma'shar, while al-Wāqīdī said likewise. The governor over al-Madinah during this year was Saīd b. al-'Āṣ, while Ziyād was in charge of al-Ḵūf, al-Ḵurrah and all of the eastern territory, and Shūrayḥ was in charge of rendering judgment at al-Ḵūf. While 'Umayr b. Yathribī was in charge of rendering judgment at al-Ḵurrah.

489. Nizak Ṭarkhān was the Hephthalite ruler of Bādghis. See Shaban, Abbāsid Revolution, 65

490. Qutaybah b. Muslim (49–96/669/70–715) was a Muslim general engaged in the conquest of Central Asia as governor of Khurāsān for al-Walid from 86/705 until 96/715. He killed Nizak Ṭarkhān after a revolt in 91/709. See Shaban, Abbāsid Revolution, 67; EI², s. v. Kutaiba b. Muslim.

491. The "river" is the Oxus or Jāyḥūn, the modern Amū Daryā. See EI², s. v. Amū Daryā.
Al-Wāqidi claimed that the raid of Sufyān b. 'Auwf al-Azdi occurred during this year, as well as his winter campaign in Byzantine territory. He also claimed that Sufyān died there and appointed 'Abdallāh b. Mas'adah al-Fazārī as his successor. Others have said that in this year Busr b. Abī Ṭāt led the people in the winter campaign in Byzantine territory, and that he was accompanied by Sufyān b. 'Auwf al-Azdi. They also said that Muḥammad b. 'Abdallāh al-Thaqafi led the summer raid in this year.

Saʿīd b. al-ʿĀṣ led the people in the pilgrimage in this year according to Abū Maʿshar, al-Wāqidi and others. The officials of the provincial capitals during this year were the same as in the previous year.
Among the events that happened during this year was the winter campaign of 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Umm al-Ḥakam al-Thaqafi in Byzantine territory.

During this year Rhodes,⁴⁹² an island in the sea, was conquered. Junādah b. Abī Umayyah al-Azdi conquered it, and, according to Muḥammad b. Ṭāwfiq, the Muslims settled there, cultivated it, and acquired wealth there. Cattle grazed about, so when evening came, they brought them into the fortress. They also had a lookout who would warn them about anyone at sea who wanted to surprise them. Thus they would be on guard against them. They were most difficult for the Byzantines, so the latter blockaded them by sea and cut off their ships. Muʿāwiyyah used to lavish provisions and stipends on them, and the enemy used to be afraid of them. When Muʿāwiyyah died, Yazīd b. Muʿāwiyyah brought them back.

The death of Ziyād b. Sumayyah also occurred in this year. I was told by 'Umar—Zuhayr—Wahib—his father—Muḥammad b. Ḥishāq—Muḥammad b. al-Zubayr—Fil, the mawlā of Zī-
The Events of the Year 53

yād: Ziyād ruled Iraq for five years, then he died in this year. I was told by 'Umar—'Ali b. Muḥammad: When Ziyād descended upon Iraq, he lasted until the year 53, then he died at al-Kūfah in the month of Ramaḍān [August 20–September 18, 673], while his deputy in charge of al-Baṣrah was Samurah b. Jundab.

How Ziyād b. Sumayyah Perished

I was told by 'Abdallah b. Ahmad al-Marwazi—his father—Sulaymān—'Abdallāh b. al-Mubārik—'Abdallāh b. Shawdhab—Kathīr b. Ziyād: Ziyād wrote to Mu‘āwiyyah, “Indeed, I have seized Iraq with my left hand while my right hand is empty.” So Mu‘āwiyyah added al-‘Arūḍ to him, which is the Yamāmah and what is adjacent to it. At that, Ibn 'Umar prayed against him, so Ziyād caught the plague and died. When he heard the news, Ibn 'Umar said, “Off with you, Ibn Sumayyah, for this world does not remain for you, and you did not attain the other [world].”

I was told by 'Umar—'Ali: Ziyād wrote to Mu‘āwiyyah, “I have seized Iraq for you with my left hand while my right hand is empty, so fill it with the Hijāz.” He sent al-Haytham b. al-Áṣad al-Nakha’ī with that [message], and Mu‘āwiyyah wrote his pact for Ziyād with al-Haytham. When the people of the Hijāz heard that, a group of them came to 'Abdallāh b. 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb relating that to him. He said, “Pray to God for Him to spare you his trouble.” He then faced the qiblah with them and prayed with them. The plague then broke out on Ziyād’s finger, and he sent to Shurayḥ, who was his judge [qādi], saying, “You see what happened to me. I was advised to have it cut off, so counsel me.” Shurayḥ then advised him, “I fear that there will be scars on your hand and suffering in your heart, and that the appointed time will approach anyway. You would thus meet God, Almighty and Great, mutilated while you had cut off your hand out of aversion to meeting Him. The alternative is that there might be improvement after a while, and since you had cut off your hand, you would live mutilated and be a reproach for your son.” At that, Ziyād gave up the idea, and Shurayḥ left. When the latter was asked about it, he in-
formed them of what he had advised Ziyād. At that, they re-
bullied him, asking, "Why didn't you advise him to cut it off?" 
He replied, "The Messenger of God said, "The advisor is 
entrusted."

I was told by 'Abdallāh b. Ahmād al-Marwāzī—his father—
Sulaymān—'Abdallāh: I heard someone who related that Ziyād 
sent to Shurayh asking his advice about cutting off his hand. 
Shurayh replied, "Don't do it. If you should live, you would be 
mutilated, and if you perish, you would have sinned against 
yourself." Ziyād remarked, "I sleep with the plague in one 
blanket," so he decided to do it. But when he saw the fire and 
the cauterizing instrument, he became anxious and refrained 
from doing it.

I was told by 'Umar—'Abd al-Malik b. Qurayb al-Āṣma'ī 
—Ibn Abi Ziyād: When death attended Ziyād, his son told him, 
"O my father, I have prepared sixty garments in which I shall 
wrap you." Ziyād replied, "O my son, better clothing than 
this has drawn near your father," or "mourning goes quickly." 
Thus he died and was buried at al-Thuwayyah beside al-Kū-
fah.493 He had dispatched Yazid towards the Hijāz as its gover-
nor. So Miskin b. Dārim said;494

I saw the "increase"495 of Islām disappear 
publicly when Ziyād took leave of us.

Al-Farazdaq said to Miskin, and he did not satirize Ziyād until 
after the latter had died:

O Miskin, God makes your eye weep, however 
it's tears flowed in error, so they descended.

You weep for an unbelieving man from a family of Maysān,496 
like Kisra in his place or Qaysār.497

493. See also Maṣūdi, Murūj, V, 66—69. According to Dinawāri, Akhār al-
Tīwāl, 239; Ziyād was buried in the cemetery of the Quraysh at al-Kūfah.
494. The following lines are also in the Diwān of al-Farazdaq. See Boucher, 
Divan, 48—9; Īṣfahānī, Aghānī, XVIII, 67, XIX, 28, 32; and Yāqūt, Mu'jam, IV, 
715.
495. "Ziyād" means "increase."
496. Maysān was the district along the lower Tigris River above al-BAshra. 
See EP, s.v. Maysān. However, Ziyād's mother, Sumayyah, is said to have
I say to him when the announcement of his death comes to me,
    rather him than a dusty gazelle in an isolated patch of sand.\footnote{498}

Miskin then answered him, saying:
O man who does not speak out,
    nor lead the folk unless he opposed me!

Bring me then a paternal uncle like mine or a father like mine or a true maternal uncle like mine,

Like ‘Amr b. ‘Amr or a father like Zurārah,
or al-Bishr, on all sides I descended from the hills.

I continue to have things like spears and a swimmer,
    and a camel\footnote{499} after night journeys from my dependents.

So this for days of defense, this for my transportation, and this instrument for my departure.

Al-Farazdaq replied:
Tell Ziyād when you come across his place of destruction,
    that the female dove has flown from the sanctuary,
    Flew and the front feathers of her wing continued to be ascribed to her,
    until she called for help to the rivers and the reeds.

I was told by ‘Abdallāh b. Aḥmad—his father—Sulaymān—‘Abdallāh—Jarir b. Ḥāzim—Jarir b. Yazīd: When I saw Ziyād,

\footnote{497. Kīsra was the Sasanian emperor, Qaysar the Byzantine emperor. See \textit{El'}, s.v. Kīsra, Kīsra.}
\footnote{498. A \textit{ṣarīmah} is a bridle or an isolated patch of sand. See Ibn Manzūr, \textit{Lisān}, XII, 319; Bevan, \textit{Nakāʾid}, III, 438.}
\footnote{499. A \textit{khaṭṭaraḥ} is a camel that puts its tail between its legs when it walks. See Ibn Manzūr, \textit{Lisān}, IV, 250.}

been a native of Zandaward in the neighboring district of Kaskar and to have belonged to the dihqān of al-Ubullah. See Baladhuri, \textit{Ansāb}, I, 489.
he was red-faced, having a squint in his right eye, with a white triangular beard, wearing a patched shirt (qamis), while he was on a female mule whose rein he had loosened.500

The death of al-Rabi' b. Ziyād al-Ḥārithī, who was the governor of Khurāsān for Ziyād, also occurred in this year.

How al-Rabi' b. Ziyād al-Ḥārithī Died

I was told by 'Umar—'Ali b. Muḥammad: Al-Rabi' b. Ziyād was governor of Khurāsān for two years and several months and died in the year in which Ziyād died. He had appointed his son 'Abdallāh b. al-Rabi' as his successor. The latter was governor for two months and then he died. Al-Rabi"'s letter of appointment from Ziyād reached Khurāsān after he had been buried. 'Abdallāh b. al-Rabi' appointed Khulayd b. 'Abdallāh al-Ḥanafi as his successor over Khurāsān.

[According to] 'Ali—Muḥammad b. al-Fāḍl—his father: I heard that al-Rabi' b. Ziyād mentioned Ḥujr b. 'Adī one day in Khurāsān, saying, "Arabs will continue to be killed in captivity after him. If they had risen up at Ḥujr's death, no man of them would be killed in captivity, but they acquiesced, so they became despised." Al-Rabi' remained for a week after saying that. Then he went out in white clothing on Friday, saying, "O people, I have become tired of life, and I am offering a prayer." They responded, "Amen." Then he raised his hand after worship, saying, "O God, if I have done good in Your sight, then take me to You at once." And the people said, "Amen!" He then went out, and collapsed before his clothing went out of sight. He was carried to his house, and appointing his son, 'Abdallāh, as his successor, he died that very day. Then his son died, after appointing Khulayd b. 'Abdallāh al-Ḥanafi as his successor. Ziyād then confirmed Khulayd and died himself while Khulayd was in charge of Khurāsān.


500. According to Ibn Qutaybah, Maʿārif, 346, the rope had been folded on the mule's neck underneath the bridle rein.
Ja'far b. Sulaymān al-Ḍuba‘i: Mu‘āwiyyah confirmed Samurah (as governor) for six months after Ziyād. Then he dismissed him. At that, Samurah exclaimed, “God curse Mu‘āwiyyah! If I obeyed God as I obeyed Mu‘āwiyyah, He would never punish me.

I was told by ’Umar—Mūsā b. Ismā’il—Sulaymān b. Muslim al-‘Ijli—his father: I passed by the mosque, while a man came to Samurah and brought his wealth as zakāt. Then that man entered and began to worship in the mosque. Another man came and beheaded him, so his head was in the mosque and his body nearby. Abū Bakrah passed by and said, “God, praise Him, says, ‘Whoever was purified has prospered, remembered the name of his Lord, and worshipped.’” My father said: I witnessed that. Samurah did not die until a severe frost took him; he thus died an evil death. I witnessed him bringing many people, and setting them before him. He would ask each man, “What is your faith?” The man would reply, “I testify that there is only one single God Who has no partner, and that Muḥammad is His servant and His messenger, and that I am not one of the Ḥarūriyyah.” He would then be brought out and beheaded, until there were more than twenty.

In this year Sa‘īd b. al-‘Āṣ led the people in the pilgrimage according to Abū Ma’shar, al-Wāqidi, and others. The governor of al-Madinah during this year was Sa‘īd b. al-‘Āṣ, while ‘Abdallāh b. Khālid b. Asīd b. al-‘Āṣ governed al-Kūfah after the death of Ziyād. Samurah b. Jundab governed al-Baṣrah after the death of Ziyād, and Khulayd b. ‘Abdallāh al-Ḥanafi governed Khurāsān.

501. Zakāt is the Islamic obligation to purify oneself through charity. See EI, s.v. Zakāt, and for a variant of this account see Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd, Ṣarḥ Nahj al-balāghah, IV, 77.
The winter campaign of Muḥammad b. Mālik in Byzantine territory took place during this year, as well as the summer campaign of Maʿn b. Yazīd al-Sulami.

The conquest by Junādah b. Abī Umayyah of an island in the sea near Constantinople called Arwād also took place during this year, as al-Wāqīḍī claimed. Muḥammad b. ʿUmar related that the Muslims stayed there for a while—it is said, seven years—while Mujāhid b. Jabr was there. Tubayʾ, the son of Kaʿb’s wife, said, “Do you see this step [darajah]? When it is removed, [word of] our homecoming will arrive.” A strong wind then arose and blew away the step, and someone who announced Muʿāwiyah’s death arrived, as well as Yazīd’s letter about coming home. At this, we returned. The island was uninhabited and ruined after that, and the Byzantines were safe.

During this year Muʿāwiyah also dismissed Saʿīd b. al-ʿĀṣ from al-Madinah and appointed Marwān b. al-Ḥakam governor over it.
Why Mu'āwiyyah Dismissed Sa'id and Appointed Marwān as Governor over al-Madinah

I was told by 'Umar—Ali b. Muḥammad—Juwayriyyah b. Asmā’—his shaykhs: Mu'āwiyyah used to incite Marwān and Sa'id b. al-'Āṣ against each other. He wrote to Sa'id b. al-'Āṣ while the latter was in charge of al-Madinah, “Demolish the house of Marwān.” But Sa'id did not demolish it, so Mu'āwiyyah sent another letter to him about demolishing it. But he did not do it, whereupon Mu'āwiyyah dismissed him and made Marwān governor. As far as Muhammad b. 'Umar is concerned, he related that Mu'āwiyyah wrote to Sa'id b. al-'Āṣ ordering him to seize all the property of Marwān and make it government property, and to seize Fadak from Marwān—Mu'āwiyyah had granted it to Marwān. At that, Sa'id b. al-'Āṣ wrote back to him, saying, “He is a close relative.” Mu'āwiyyah then wrote to him for the second time ordering him to sequester Marwān’s property. But Sa'id b. al-'Āṣ refused and took both letters and placed them with a slave-girl. When Sa'id b. al-'Āṣ was dismissed from al-Madinah and Marwān became its governor, Mu'āwiyyah wrote to Marwān b. al-Ḥakam ordering him to seize the property of Sa'id b. al-'Āṣ in the Hijāz, sending the letter to him with (Marwān’s) son 'Abd al-Malik. Marwān told him, “If it were anything but a letter from the Commander of the Faithful, I would reject it.” At that, Sa'id b. al-'Āṣ called for both letters in which Mu'āwiyyah had written to him about the property of Marwān, and in which he had ordered him to seize Marwān’s property. Sa'id took them to Marwān, who remarked, “Sa'id was more attached to us than we were to him,” and desisted from seizing Sa'id’s property. Sa'id b. al-'Āṣ also wrote to Mu'āwiyyah, “[I am] astonished at how the Commander of the Faithful treated us concerning our kinship, so that we would bear a grudge against each other. The Commander of the Faithful in spite of his prudence, steadfastness against those evils he abhors, and forgiveness, has introduced estrangement and enmity between us, while our descendants will possess that as an inheritance. By God, if we were not sons

503. Fadak was a small agricultural town in the northern Hijāz. See EI², s.v. Fadak.
of a single uncle, God would not have united us with him out of support for the wronged Caliph. There was truth for us in the congruence of our speech so that we would pay attention to that and in which we obtained good." At that, Mu‘awiyah wrote back to him disavowing that, and saying that, for Sa‘id’s sake, he would return to the best [behavior] that Sa‘id knew about him.

The account now returns to that of ‘Umar—‘Ali b. Mu‘ammad: When Mu‘awiyah appointed Marwân governor, he wrote to him, “Demolish the house of Sa‘id.” When Marwân (started to) carry out the deed and rode to demolish it, Sa‘id asked him, “O Abū ‘Abd al-Malik, are you going to demolish my house?” Marwan replied, “Yes, the Commander of the Faithful wrote to me, and if he wrote about demolishing my [own] house, I would do it.” Sa‘id remarked, “I would not do so.” Marwan responded, “Certainly, by God, if he wrote to you, you would demolish it.” Sa‘id retorted, “Certainly not, Abū ‘Abd al-Malik.” Then he told his servant, “Go off and bring me Mu‘awiyah’s letter.” The servant then brought Mu‘awiyah’s letter to Sa‘id b. al-‘Āṣ about demolishing the house of Marwân b. al-Ḥakam. Marwân remarked, “He wrote to you, O Abū ‘Uthmân, about demolishing my house, but you didn’t demolish [it], and did not inform me.” Sa‘id replied, “I did not demolish your house, yet I am not ensured against you. Mu‘awiyah wanted to incite us against each other.” At that, Marwân exclaimed, “May my father and mother be your ransom! By God, you have more plumage than we and offspring.” Marwân returned without demolishing Sa‘id’s house.

I was told by ‘Umar—‘Ali—Abū Muḥammad b. Dhakwân al-Qurashi: Sa‘id b. al-‘Āṣ came to Mu‘awiyah, who asked him, “O Abū ‘Uthmân, how did you leave Abū ‘Abd al-Malik?” Sa‘id replied, “I left him taking control of your work and carrying out your command.” Mu‘awiyah remarked, “Indeed he is like the owner of a loaf of bread which was baked enough so he ate it.” Sa‘id responded, “Certainly not, by God, O Commander of the Faithful, indeed he is with the people. The whip is not used

504. That is, ‘Uthmân.
505. The text reads: rishan; C reads: nasaban, “lineage.”
on them, and the sword is not allowed for them. They exchange like the impact of arrows, an arrow for you and an arrow against you." Mu‘awiya asked, "What separated you from him?" Sa‘id replied, "He was afraid of me for his dignity, and I feared him for mine." Mu‘awiya asked, "So why is he obliged to you?" Sa‘id answered, "I pleased him when absent, and I pleased him when present." Mu‘awiya remarked, you left us, O Abū ‘Uthmān, in these trifles." Sa‘id responded, "Yes, O Commander of the Faithful. I assumed the burden, sufficed for the determination, and was close. If you called, I would answer, and if you left, I would remove."


In this year Mu‘awiya also made ‘Ubaydallah b. Ziyād governor of Khurāsān.

How ‘Ubaydallah b. Ziyād Became Governor of Khurāsān

I was told by ‘Umar—‘Ali b. Muḥammad—Salamah b. Muḥārib and Muḥammad b. Abān al-Qurashi: After Ziyād died, ‘Ubaydallah visited Mu‘awiya, who asked him, "Whom did my brother appoint as his deputy at al-Kūfah?" He replied, "‘Abdallah b. Khālid b. Asid." Mu‘awiya went on, "And whom did he put in charge of al-Baṣrah?" ‘Ubaydallah answered, "Samurah b. Jundab al-Fazārī." Mu‘awiya then told him, "If your father had appointed you to a position, I would do so as well." At that, ‘Ubaydallah responded, "I implore you by God, lest someone shall say to me after you, ‘If your father and your uncle had made you a governor, I would make you a governor.’"

When Mu‘awiya wanted to make someone belonging to the

506. See Freytag, Proverbia, III, 238.
Banū Ḥarb a governor, he would make him governor of al-Ṭāʿif. If he saw that he performed well and was not astonished at him, he would add the governorship of Mecca to his first position. If he governed well and ably looked after his responsibilities, Muʿāwiya would combine al-Madinah with both of his other positions. Thus, when a man was put in charge of al-Ṭāʿif, it used to be said, “He is with Abū Jād.” Then when Muʿāwiya put him in charge of Mecca, it was said, “He is with the Qurʾān.” And when he put him in charge of al-Madinah, it was said, “He has been skillful.”

When `Ubaydallāḥ said what he did, Muʿāwiya put him in charge of Khurāsān. Then, when he had made him governor, he told him, “I have given trust to you as I do to my officials. Now then, I enjoin you by the ties of kinship, because of your special status with me, not to sell a lot for a little, and restrain yourself, and fulfill any agreement you make with an enemy, so you will reduce the burden for you[rself] and for me from you. Open your door to the people; thus you will have information from them. You and they are equal. When you decide on a matter, express it openly to the people, and no one will expect anything or make demands on you, while you will be able to carry [it] out. When you encounter your enemies, and they defeat you at the border of the territory, do not let them defeat you in its interior. If your companions need you to assist them personally, do so.

I was told by `Umar—ʿAli—ʿAli b. Mujāhid—Ibn Ishāq: Muʿāwiya appointed `Ubaydallāḥ b. Ziyādh as governor, saying, “Seize the sword if it does not cut.” He also told him, “Fear God, and don’t prefer anything to that, for there is compensation in fearing Him. It preserves [you] from lowering your own reputation. If you make a promise, keep it; don’t sell a lot for a little, and don’t announce something until you have completely understood it[‘s consequences]. Once it has been announced, don’t let it return to harm you. When you encounter your enemies, let those who are with you be more numerous. Swear to [your subjects] upon the Book of God, don’t tempt anyone with that to which he has no right; and don’t make

507. Lit. “the father of improvement”, that is, at the beginning of his career.
anyone feel hopeless regarding his rights." Then 'Ubaydallāh took leave of him.

I was told by 'Umar—'Alī—Maslamah: 'Ubaydallāh set out from Syria for Khurāsān at the end of the year 53 (673) when he was twenty-five years old, sending Aslam b. Zūr ʿah al-Kilābī to Khurāsān in advance. He left Syria accompanied by al-Jaʿd b. Qays al-Namari who recited verses (rajaz) before him in an elegy for Ziyād.

On another occasion, 'Umar reported in his book which he entitled The Book of Information About the People of al-.Busrah: "I was told by Abū al-Ḥasan al-Madāʾini that when Muʿāwiyah appointed 'Ubaydallāh b. Ziyād over Khurāsān, the latter went out wearing a turban—he was handsome—while al-Jaʿd b. Qays recited an elegy for Ziyād to him:

Continue to rebuke me, my critic,
about what removed my blessing before today.

The benefactor has departed and the permanent protection,

And [having] grace, many sheep, a huge fortune, many camels

And the livestock walking after sleep.

If only all of the excellent [horses] with the folk

Were given poison to drink a while before today,

With four [days] elapsing from the month of fasting.

From it also is:

Tuesday which has past,

---

510. Al-hawm is a herd of approximately one thousand camels. See Ibn Manẓūr, Lisān, XII, 62.
511. That is, the month of Ramadān.
A day on which the King decreed what He decreed:  

The death of a righteous, glorifying [man], sturdy of strength.  

Giving to Ja‘d was hot in him and blazed.  

Ziyād was a mountain with difficult peaks,  

Astute, if you looked for faults, he refused.  

If Ziyād had survived, I would hope that God would not 

Remove him.  

‘Ubaydallāh wept that day until his turban fell off of his head.  

‘Ubaydallāh reached Khurāsān, then he crossed the river to 

the mountain of Bukhārā on camels, He was thus the first to 

reach the Bukhārans by crossing the mountain with an army. He 

conquered Rāmīthan and Baykand,512 both of which belong to 

Bukhārā, and reached the Bukhārans from there. (According to)  


b. Ziyād encountered Turks at Bukhārā. Qabj Khatun, their 

king’s wife, was with the king. When God defeated them, the 

Turks urged her to put on her slippers. She put on one of them, 

while the other was left behind. The Muslims acquired the 

stocking which was worth two hundred thousand dirhams.  

[170] I was told by ‘Ali—Muḥammad b. Ḥaḍṣ—‘Ubaydallāh b. Zi- 

yād b. Ma‘mar—‘Ubadah b. Ḥiṣn: I did not see anyone more 

courageous than ‘Ubaydallāh b. Ziyād. An army of Turks en- 

countered us in Khurāsān, and I saw him fighting. He charged 

them, penetrated their ranks, and disappeared from sight. Then 

he raised his pennon dripping with blood. 

(According to) ‘Ali—Maslamah: There were two thousand 

Bukhārans, whom ‘Ubaydallāh b. Ziyād brought to al- Başrah.  

512. Rāmīthan/Rāmītin and Baykand/Paykand were towns two farsakh [twelve km] apart in the Bukhārā oasis. See the account of this campaign in Ba- 
lādhuri, Futūḥ, 410. Rāmīthan was considered to be the old city of Bukhārā, 

while Baykand was a large commercial center, five farsakh [thirty km] from 

All of them were excellent archers.\textsuperscript{513} Maslamah (said): The army of the Turks at Bukhārā was one of the numerous armies of Khurāsān. We were also told by 'Ali—al-Hudhāli: There were five armies in Khurāsān, four of which al-Āhnaf b. Qays encountered—(one) which encountered him between Qhūhistan and Abrashiār,\textsuperscript{514} and the three which he met at the Marghāb.\textsuperscript{515} The fifth army was that of Qārin which 'Abdallāh b. Khāzim scattered.\textsuperscript{516} (According to) 'Alī—Maslamah: 'Ubaydal-lāh b. Ziyād stayed in Khurāsān for two years.

Marwān b. al-Ḥakam led the people in the pilgrimage in this year.

I was told by Aḥmad b. Thābit—someone—Iṣḥāq b. ‘Īsā—Abū Ma’shar, while al-Wāqidī and others said likewise: Marwān b. al-Ḥakam was in charge of al-Madinah in this year, while 'Abdallāh b. Khālid b. Asid was in charge of al-Kūfah—some of them said al-Ḍahhāk b. Qays was in charge there—and 'Abdallāh b. 'Amr b. Ghaylān was in charge of al-BAṣrāh.

\textsuperscript{513} See Baladhuri, Futūḥ, 376, 410–11; Ya'qūbī, Taʾrīkh, II, 237; and Yāqūt, Muʾjam, I, 522. However Ziyād himself is said to have built a street in al-Baṣrāh for four thousand Bukhārāns (Ibn al-Faqīh, Buldān, 191) and to have employed them in his police force at al-Kūfah (Ibn Saʿd, Tabaqāt, VI, 152).

\textsuperscript{514} Abrashahr is the Arabicized form of Aparshahr, the late Sasanian name of the city of Nishāpur (Naysābūr), the district capital of western Khurāsān. See EI', s. v. Abarshahr.

\textsuperscript{515} The Marghāb is the Murghāb River in Eastern Khurāsān, on which the city of Marw was located. See EI', Supp., s. v. Merw al-Shāḥīdān.

\textsuperscript{516} This was in Qhūhistan in 33(653) See Shaban, Abbāsid Revolution, 26.
Among the events that happened during this year was the winter campaign of Sufyān b. 'Awf al-Azdi in Byzantine territory. That is what al-Wāqidī said. However, some said the one who led the winter campaign in Byzantine territory in this year was 'Amr b. Muḥriz; and others said the one who led the winter campaign there was 'Abdallāh b. Qays al-Fazārī. Still others said that it was Mālik b. 'Abdallāh.

During this year Muʿāwiyah dismissed 'Abdallāh b. 'Amr b. Ghaylān from al-Baṣrah and put 'Ubaydallāh b. Ziyād in charge.

Why Muʿāwiyah Dismissed 'Abdallāh b. 'Amr b. Ghaylān and Appointed 'Ubaydallāh over al-Baṣrah

I was told by 'Umar—al-Walid b. Hishām and 'Alī b. Muḥammad (they each differed in some of the narrative): When 'Abdallāh b. 'Amr b. Ghaylān spoke from the pulpit of al-Baṣrah, one of the Banū Ḍabbah threw rocks at him. (According to) 'Umar
—Abū al-Hasan: He was called Jubayr b. al-Dahhāk, one of the Banū Dirār. When 'Āli ordered the man's hand to be cut off, the latter said:

Attentive obedience and submission
are good and more forgiving for the Banū Tamīm.

The Banū Dabbah then came to him, saying, "Our companion inflicted what he suffered upon himself, and the amīr has carried out his punishment. We are not assured that, should the report about him reach the Commander of the Faithful, he would not order personal or group punishment. If the amīr sees fit to write a letter for us, one of us will take it to the Commander of the Faithful to inform him that the amīr cut off his hand merely out of suspicion and without clear evidence." So 'Abdallāh wrote to Mu‘awiyah for them afterwards, and they held onto the letter until the beginning of the year arrived. Abū al-Hasan (said): Less than six months later the Dabbīs headed for Mu‘awiyah and visited him, saying, "O Commander of the Faithful, he dismembered our companion unjustly, and this is his letter to you." Mu‘awiyah read the letter and remarked, "As far as retaliation against my officials is concerned, it is not allowed, and there is no way against him, but if you should wish, I would pay your companion blood money." They replied, "Then do so." Mu‘awiyah then paid him blood money from the treasury, dismissed 'Abdallāh, and told them, "Choose whom you would like for me to put in charge of your province." They replied, "Let the Commander of the Faithful choose for us." Since he knew the opinion held by the people of al-Baṣrāh about Ibn 'Āmir, he asked, "How would you like Ibn 'Āmir, for he is someone about whose distinction, decency, and purity you have known?" They answered, "The Commander of the Faithful knows best." He began to repeat that to them in order to sound them out; then he said, "I have put my nephew, 'Ubaydallāh b. Ziyād, in charge of you."

(According to) 'Umar—'Ali b. Muḥammad: In this year Mu‘awiyah dismissed 'Abdallāh b. 'Amr and put 'Ubaydallāh b. Ziyād in charge of al-Baṣrāh, and he put 'Ubaydallāh Aslām b. Zur‘ah in charge of Khurāsān. The latter did not raid or conquer any territory there. 'Ubaydallāh put 'Abdallāh b. Ḥiṣn in charge
of his police force and Zurārah b. Awfā in charge of rendering judgment, then he dismissed him and put Ibn Udhaynah al-'Abdi in charge of rendering judgment.

In this year Mu‘āwiyyah also dismissed ‘Abdallah b. Khalid b. Asid from al-Kūfah and put al-Dāḥāk b. Qays al-Fihrī in charge there.517

In this year Marwān b. al-Ḥakam led the people in the pilgrimage. I was told that by Aḥmad b. Thābit—Iṣhāq b. ʿIsā—Abū Maʿshar.

517. According to Ibn Khayyāt, Taʿrikh, i, 265, this was in year 54(673/4).
Among these events was the winter campaign of Junādah b. Abī Umayyah in Byzantine territory. 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Mās'ūd is also said to have led this campaign. Yazīd b. Shajarah al-Rahāwi is also said to have raided by sea while 'Iyād b. al-Hārith did so by land.

Al-Walīd b. 'Utba b. Abī Suflān led the people in the pilgrimage according to the account I was told by Aḥmad b. Thābit—someone—Iṣḥāq b. 'Īsā—Abū Ma'shar.

During this year Muʿāwiya performed the minor pilgrimage ('umrah) during Rajab (May 20–June 18, 676).

During this year Muʿāwiya summoned the people to acknowledge his son, Yazīd, as his successor, and made him heir apparent (wālī al-ʾahd).\(^{518}\)

Why Muʿāwiya Made His Son, Yazīd, Heir Apparent

I was told by al-Ḥārith—ʿAlī b. Muḥammad—Abū Ismāʿīl al-Hamdānī and ʿAlī b. Mujāhid—al-Shaʿbī: Al-Mughirah came to

\(^{518}\) Lit: "possessor of a pact."
Mu'awiyah, and gave him his resignation, while complaining of weakness. Mu'awiyah relieved him and wanted to appoint Sa'id b. al-`As. Al-Mughirah's secretary heard of that, so he came to Sa'id b. al-`As and informed him of this while a Kufan called Rabi'ah or al-Rabi' of the Khuzah was with him. The latter then came to al-Mughirah, saying, "O Mughirah, I certainly think that the Commander of the Faithful disliked you. I saw Ibn Khunays, your secretary, with Sa'id b. al-`As informing him that the Commander of the Faithful would put him in charge of al-Kufah." Al-Mughirah responded, "Does he not say as al-A'shâ said; Or was your master absent so you suffered a need? and perhaps your master will return with backing.

Go slowly! I will go to Yazid." Al-Mughirah then went to see Yazid, and proposed the acknowledgement to him. When Yazid conveyed that to his father, Mu'awiyah reappointed al-Mughirah to al-Kufah, ordering him to work for Yazid's acknowledgement. Al-Mughirah then departed for al-Kufah, and his secretary, Ibn Khunays, came to him, saying, "By God, I did not deceive you nor betray you nor did I dislike your government, but I owed Sa'id a favor, and I was grateful to him for it."

Al-Mughirah was pleased with him and took him back into his chancery. Al-Mughirah also worked for Yazid's acknowledgement, and sent an envoy to Mu'awiyah about it.

I was told by al-Hârith—`Ali—Maslamah: When Mu'awiyah wanted to acknowledge Yazid (as his successor) he wrote to Ziyâd, asking him for advice. Ziyâd then sent for 'Ubayd b. Ka'b al-Numayri, saying, "Everyone who asks advice has trust, and every secret has a place to put it. Indeed people have devised for them two qualities—revealing secrets and giving out advice to people who do not deserve it. The only repository for secrets is one of two men—an otherworldly man who hopes for a reward and a man of this world who has self-respect and discernment which preserves his esteem. I have experienced them both from you, therefore I have praised that on your behalf. I have summoned you about a matter which I hesitate to put in writing. Indeed the Commander of the Faithful has written to me claiming that he has decided to acknowledge Yazid (as his
successor]. However, his is afraid of the people's disapproval. He hopes for their agreement, and asks my advice. Support for Islam and its security is important, while Yazid is easy-going and neglectful, given his devotion to hunting. So meet the Commander of the Faithful, acting on my behalf, and inform him about Yazid's actions. Tell him, 'Go slowly in this matter, for it would be more appropriate in order to accomplish what you want. Don't hurry, because attainment with delay is better than haste without success.'

‘Ubayd answered him, “There is an alternative.” Ziyād asked, “What is it?” ‘Ubayd advised, “Don’t disparage Mu‘āwiyah’s view to him, and don’t make him hate his son. I shall meet with Yazid in secret, informing him on your behalf that the Commander of the Faithful has written to you asking your advice about Yazid’s acknowledgement [as successor], and that you fear the disapproval of the people because of flaws which they hold against him. I shall also tell him that you think he should abandon the behavior that is held against him, so that the Commander of the Faithful’s argument before the people would be strengthened. What you desire will be easy. Thus you will have prepared Yazid and satisfied the Commander of the Faithful, as well as having avoided what you fear regarding the community.” At that, Ziyād replied, “You have hit the nail on the head. Depart with God’s blessing. If you are successful, it will not be disavowed, and if you are mistaken, [it will] not be deception. I do not consider you to be one who makes mistakes, if God wills.” ‘Ubayd responded, “You say what you think, and God determines in secret what He knows.” He then came to Yazid and conferred with him (about that), while Ziyād wrote to Mu‘āwiyah urging him to be cautious and not to hurry. Mu‘āwiyah accepted that, and Yazid refrained from doing much of what he used to do. Then ‘Ubayd came back to Ziyād, and the latter gave him a land-grant.

I was told by al-Ḥārith—‘Alī: When Ziyād died, Mu‘āwiyah called for a document about appointing Yazid as his successor and read it to the people. In the event of his death, Yazid would

---

519. The text reads: fawt; C reads: mawt, “death.”
520. Lit. “You have hit the matter with its stone.”
be heir apparent. He was able to get the people to acknowledge Yazid except for five persons.\footnote{According to Ibn Khayyāt, Taʾrikh, I, 248, Muʿāwiyyah had the Syrians acknowledge Yazid in the year 50(670/71).}

I was told by Yaʿqīb b. Ibrāhīm—Ismāʿīl b. Ibrāhīm—Ibn ʿAwn—a man at Nakhlah:\footnote{This place is either Nakhlat Muhmūd, the first stopping-place on the way from Mecca to al-Ṣādir, or Nakhlah al-Yamāniyyah, the valley south of Mecca where the Battle of Ḥunayn was fought. See Yāqūt, Muʾjam, IV, 769.} The people acknowledged Yazid b. Muʿāwiyyah except for al-Ḥusayn b. ʿAli, Ibn ʿUmar, Ibn al-Zubayr, ʿAbd al-Rahmān b. Abī Bakr, and Ibn ʿAbbās. So when Muʿāwiyyah came (to al-Madīnah) he sent for al-Ḥusayn b. ʿAli, saying, "O cousin, the people have been able to acknowledge Yazid except for five persons of the Quraysh whom you lead. O cousin, what is your purpose in disagreeing?" He replied, "Do I lead them?" Muʿāwiyyah replied that he did. Al-Ḥusayn said, "So send for them, and if they acknowledge [Yazid], I would be one of them, and if not, don't be rushing me into something." Muʿāwiyyah asked, "And would you do so?" When al-Ḥusayn replied that he would, Muʿāwiyyah then obliged him not to inform anyone about their conversation. Although that was difficult for him, al-Ḥusayn granted that, and then left. Ibn al-Zubayr had a man wait for al-Ḥusayn in the street, who said, "Your brother, Ibn al-Zubayr asks you, 'What happened?'" He continued thus with al-Ḥusayn until he got something out of him. Then, after (meeting with) al-Ḥusayn, Muʿāwiyyah sent for Ibn al-Zubayr, saying to him, "The people have been able to do this except for five persons of the Quraysh. You lead them, O cousin, so what is your purpose in disagreeing?" Ibn al-Zubayr asked, "Do I lead them?" When Muʿāwiyyah replied that he did, Ibn al-Zubayr said, "So send for them, and if they acknowledge, I would be one of them, and if not, don't be rushing me into something." Muʿāwiyyah asked, "And would you do so?" When he replied that he would, Muʿāwiyyah obliged him not to inform anyone of their conversation. He replied, "O Commander of the Faithful, we are in the sanctuary of God, Almighty and Great, and the pact of God, praise Him, is serious." So he refused him and left. Then, after Ibn al-Zubayr, Muʿāwiyyah sent for Ibn ʿUmar and spoke with him in

\footnote{521. According to Ibn Khayyāt, Taʾrikh, I, 248, Muʿāwiyyah had the Syrians acknowledge Yazid in the year 50(670/71).}

\footnote{522. This place is either Nakhlat Muhmūd, the first stopping-place on the way from Mecca to al-Ṣādir, or Nakhlah al-Yamāniyyah, the valley south of Mecca where the Battle of Ḥunayn was fought. See Yāqūt, Muʾjam, IV, 769.}
words that were softer than those he had used with his companion, saying, "Indeed, I fear that I would leave the community of Muhammad after me like sheep without a shepherd. It has been possible for the people to do this except for five persons of Quraysh, whom you lead. So what is your purpose in disagreeing?" Ibn 'Umar replied, "What would you think about something that will avoid censure and spare blood while you achieve your purpose thereby?" Mu'awiya replied, "I would like that." Ibn 'Umar said, "Set up your throne publicly, then I will come and acknowledge you on condition that I will enter after you into whatever the community shall agree upon. For, by God, if the community should agree upon an Abyssinian slave after you, I would do the same." Mu'awiya asked, "And would you do so?" He answered that he would. Then he left, and arriving at his home, he shut his door. People began to come but he would not admit them. Mu'awiya then sent for 'Abd al-Rahmân b. Abi Bakr saying, "O Ibn Abi Bakr, by what hand or foot do you come to disobey me?" He replied, "I hope that it would be good for me." Mu'awiya responded, "By God, I intended to kill you." He answered, "If you do so, may God cause a curse to follow you in this world for it and make you enter the fire in the next [world] for it." The man at Nakhlah did not mention Ibn 'Abbas.523

Marwân b. al-Ḥakam was the governor of al-Madînâ during this year, while al-Dâhâk b. Qays was in charge of al-Kûfah, ' Ubaydallâh b. Ziyâd was in charge of al- Baṣrah, and Sa'îd b. 'Uthmân was in charge of Khurâsân.

The reason why Sa'îd was governor of Khurâsân is in the account which I was told by 'Umar—'Ali—Muḥammad b. Ḥafṣ: When Sa'îd b. 'Uthmân asked Mu'awiya to make him governor of Khurâsân, the latter replied, "' Ubaydallâh b. Ziyâd is there." Sa'îd then asked, "Did not my father make you and raise you until you achieved through his effort the utmost point which he was not able to attain nor seek to surpass? But you were not grateful for his favor nor requited him for his benefits. You put this one (that is Yazîd b. Mu'awiya) ahead of me.

523. According to Ibn Khayyât, Tâ'rikh, I, 232–57, these events occurred in year 51(671/2)
and acknowledged him. By God, I am better than he with respect to father, mother, and self.” Mu‘awiyah replied, “As far as your father’s favor is concerned, I am obliged to repay him. It was out of gratitude for that that I sought revenge for his blood until matters ran their course, and I will not blame myself for rallying my forces. Regarding the superiority of your father over Yazid’s, your father, by God, was better than I and closer to the Messenger of God. Concerning the superiority of your mother over Yazid’s, it is not denied. A woman from Quraysh is better than a woman from the Kalb. As for your superiority over him, by God, I want the Ghūţah to be filled by men like you for Yazid.” At that, Yazid told Mu‘awiyah, “O Commander of the Faithful, he is your paternal cousin, and you are the most worthy to consider his case. He censured me to you, so censure him.” Mu‘awiyah then put Sa‘īd in charge of the military affairs of Khurāsān and Ishāq b. Ṭalhah in charge of collecting taxes there. This Ishāq was a maternal cousin of Mu‘awiyah, and his mother was Umm Abān bt. ‘Utbah b. Rabi‘ah. When he reached al-Rayy, Ishāq b. Ṭalhah died, so Sa‘īd was put in charge of both the taxes and military affairs of Khurāsān.

I was told by ‘Umar—‘Ali—Maslamah: Sa‘īd left for Khurāsān accompanied by Aws b. Tha‘labah al-Taymi, the master of Qaṣr Aws, Ṭalhah b. ‘Abdallāh b. Khalaf al-Khuza‘i, al-Muhallab b. Abī Ṣufrah, and Rabi‘ah b. ‘Isl, one of the Banū ‘Amr b. Yarbū. There were bedouin folk barring the road against pilgrims in the depth of a defile. Sa‘īd was told, “Here are folk barring the road against pilgrims, and they fear to take to the road lest you take them out with you. Sa‘īd then took out some folk of the Banū Tamīm, among whom was Mālik b. al-Rayb al-Māzini, along with youths who were with him. Concerning them the poet declaimed:

---

524. The Ghūţah is the fertile cultivated region around Damascus irrigated by the Baradā River. See EI, s.v. al-Ghūţa.
526. See ʿIṣfahānī, Aghānī, XIX, 163; Ibn Qutaybah, Shuʿarā’, 270.
The Events of the Year 56

God save you from al-Qasim, 527

And from Abū Ḥardabah 528 the evil,

And from Ghuwayth 529 the cutpurse,

And Mālik and his poisoned sword.

[According to] 'Alī—Maslamah: Sa'īd b. 'Uthmān arrived and crossed the river to Samarqand. 530 The people of the Şughd 531 came out against him, and they fought each other all day until nightfall, then they disengaged without further fighting. 532 At that, Mālik b. al-Rayb said, criticizing Sa'īd:

You continued to tremble on the Battle-day of the Şughd,
standing
out of cowardice until I feared that you had become a Christian,

And there was not in 'Uthmān anything I knew,
except his offspring in his group when he turned back.

If it was not for the Banū Ḥarb, your blood would be sprinkled inside broken and one-eyed vermin.

When the next day came, Sa'īd b. 'Uthmān went out to them and the Şughd resisted him. He fought them, routed them, and besieged them in their city. Then they made peace with him and gave him fifty youths, the sons of their grandees, to be held

---

527. Al Qasim is a region of the Najd in central Arabia.
528. Abū Ḥardabah was a member of the Banū Athālah b. Māzin. See Ḥṣafahānī, Aghānī, XIX, 163.
529. Ghuwayth was a member of the Banū Ka'b b. Mālik b. Ḥanẓalah. See Ḥṣafahānī, Aghānī, XIX, 163.
530. Samarqand, on the Zarafshān River in Central Asia, was the main city of Şoghdia. See Le Strange, Lands, 463–65, Barthold, Turkestan, 83–93.
531. The Şughd were the Şoghdians who inhabited the region along the Zarafshān River in Central Asia, ancient Sogdiana. Le Strange, Lands, 460–73, Barthold, Turkestan, index: Soghdiana.
532. For this campaign see Balādhuri, Futūḥ, 411.
as hostages by him. He then crossed (again) and stayed at al-
Tirmidh.\textsuperscript{533} He did not keep (his agreement) with them and
brought the hostage youths with him to al-Madinah.\textsuperscript{534}

Saʿīd b. ʿUthmān arrived in Khurāsān while Aslam b. Zurʿah
al-Kilābi was there on behalf of ʿUbaydallāh b. Ziyād. Aslam b.
Zurʿah continued to live there until ʿUbaydallāh b. Ziyād wrote
to him about entrusting Khurāsān to him for a second time.
When the letter of ʿUbaydallāh reached Aslam, he knocked at
night for Saʿīd b. ʿUthmān. At that, a slave girl of Saʿīd's gave
birth to a boy prematurely. Said would say, “I shall certainly
kill a man of the Banū Ḥarb [in retaliation] for him.” Saʿīd
came to Muʿāwiya, complaining to him about Aslam, and the
Qaysīyyah became angry. When Hamām b. Qabisah al-Namari
entered and Muʿāwiya noticed that his eyes were reddened, he
said, “O Hamām, both your eyes are reddened.” Hamām re-
plied, “On the Battle-day of Siffin they were even redder.” That
distressed Muʿāwiya, and when Saʿīd saw that, he held back
from Aslam. Aslam b. Zurʿah thus remained in charge of Khu-
rāsān as governor for ʿUbaydallāh b. Ziyād for two years.

\textsuperscript{533} Al-Tirmidh was the most important town in the district of Saghāniyān,
north of the upper Oxus River between its confluence with the Wakhsh and

\textsuperscript{534} According to Balādhuri, \textit{Futūḥ}, 411, Saʿīd took fifteen, forty or eighty
noble youths hostage at Bukhārā. When he forced them into agricultural slav-
ery at al-Madinah, they are said to have killed him and committed mass sui-
cide. See Balādhuri, \textit{Ansāb}, V, 117–19; Narshakhi, \textit{Tārikh-i Bukhārā}, trans-
lated by R. Frye as \textit{The History of Bukhārā}, 40–41.
The winter campaign of 'Abdallāh b. Qays in Byzantine territory occurred during this year.

According to al-Wāqīdī, Marwān was dismissed from al-Madina in Dhū al-Qa'dah 57 (September 5–October 4, 677). According to someone else, Marwān governed al-Madina during this year. Al-Wāqīdī said: When Muʿawiyah dismissed Marwān, he appointed al-Walid ibn 'Utba ibn Sufyān over al-Madina. Abū Maʿshar's account is similar to that of al-Wāqīdī. I was told that account by Aḥmad b. Thābit al-Rāzī—someone—Iṣḥāq b. ʿĪsā.

The governor in charge of al-Kūfah during this year was al-Dāḥhāk b. Qays, while ʿUbaydallāh b. Ziyād was in charge of al-Baṣrah and Saʿīd b. ʿUthmān b. ʿAffān was in charge of Khufrāsān.
The Events of the Year

58
(November 3, 677—October 23, 678)

According to Abū Maʿshar, Muʿāwiyyah dismissed Marwān from al-Madīnah in Dhū al-Qa’dah [August 25—September 24, 678], and made Walīd b. ʿUtbah b. Abī Sufyān governor over it. I was told that by Abī Ḥamad b. Thābit—someone—Ishāq b. ʿIsā.

During this year Mālik b. ʿAbdallāh al-Khathʿamī raided Byzantine territory.

In this year Yazīd b. Shajārah was killed at sea according to al-Wāqīdī. ʿAmr b. Yazīd al-Juhānī [said]: It was Yazīd who led the winter campaign in Byzantine territory. It was also said: The one who raided by sea in this year was Junādah b. Abī Umayyah.

Al-Walīd b. ʿUtbah b. Abī Sufyān led the people in the pilgrimage this year. I was told a similar account by Abī Ḥamad b. Thābit—someone—Ishāq b. ʿIsā—Abū Maʿshar. Al-Wāqīdī and others said likewise.

In this year Muʿāwiyyah put ʿAbd al-Raḥmān b. ʿAbdallāh b. Uṭhман b. Rabīʿah al-Thaqafi in charge of al-Kūfah. He was the son of Umm ʿAbd al-Ḥakam, the sister of Muʿāwiyyah b. Abī Sufyān. Muʿāwiyyah had previously dismissed al-Ḍahḥāk b. Qays.
The Events of the Year 58

from it. During 'Abd al-Rahmān's term of office in this year a group of the Khārijites rebelled who previously had recognized al-Mustawrid b. 'Ullifah and whom al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah had held in the prison. Al-Mughirah had defeated them and put them in the prison. Then, when al-Mughirah died, they left the prison.

(According to) Hāshim b. Muḥammad—Abū Mikhnaf—‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Jundab—‘Abdallāh b. ‘Utbāh al-Ghanwī: Hayyān b. Zabyān al-Sulāmī gathered his companions about him. After praising and extolling God, he addressed them, “Now then, indeed God, Almighty and Great, decreed the jihād for us. Among us there are those whose term has been decided, those who still wait, and those [who are] righteous victors by their superiority. Whoever among us still waits will be one of our predecessors, the ones deciding their term, performing good deeds first. Whoever among you desires God and His reward, let him follow the way of his companions and his brothers. God will grant him the reward of this world and the better reward of the other world, and God is with those who are good.”

Mu‘ādh b. Juwayn al-Tā‘ī said, “O people of Islām, by God, if we knew that when we gave up jihād against oppressors and the rejection of injustice, we would have some excuse with God for doing so, abandoning it would be easier for us and lighter than undertaking it. But, since we were created with hearts and ears, we knew and were convinced that there will be no excuse for us until we reject oppression and change injustice by jihād against the oppressors.” Then he continued, “Extend your hand and we shall acknowledge you.” So Mu‘ādh and the folk acknowledged Hayyān b. Zabyān, striking him on the hand. That was during the governorship of ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. ‘Abdallāh b. ‘Uthmān al-Thaqafī who was the son of Umm al-Ḥakam, while Zā‘idah b. Qudāmah al-Thaqafī was in charge of the police.

Then, several days after that, the folk assembled at the residence of Mu‘ādh b. Juwayn b. Ḥuṣayn al-Tā‘ī. Hayyān b. Zabyān addressed them, “Servants of God, advise[me] with your

535. According to Ibn Khayyāt, Ta‘īkh, I, 269, this was in the year 57(676/7).
opinion. Where do you instruct me to go." Muʿadh told him, "I think you should set out with us to Ḥulwān so that we can settle there, for it is a district between the plain and the mountain and between the city and the frontier—that is the frontier of al-Rayy. Thus, whoever shares our view among the people of the city, the frontier, the mountains, and the Sawād136 would join us." Ḥayyān answered him, "Your enemy would overtake you before the people would gather to you. By my life, they will not leave you until they gather to you. But I thought I would take you out beside al-Kūfah and the salt marsh, or Zurārah and al-Ḥirah. Then we would fight them until we reach our Lord. By God, I knew that, being less than one hundred men, you would not be able to defeat your enemy, nor inflict severe damage on them. But when God knows that you exert yourselves in jihād against His enemy and yours, you will have His reward and escape from sin." They replied, "Our view is the same as yours."

[183] At that, 'Itris b. 'Urqūb, Abū Sulaymān al-Shaybānī told them, "I do not share the view of your group. Take into consideration that I do not think you are ignorant of my knowledge of warfare and my experience with affairs." They told him, "You are certainly as you say, so what is your view?" 'Itris said, "I don't think that you should go out against the people at the city. You are a few among many. By God, you would not do more than have them surround you, and you would make them happy by killing you. This is not a shrewd policy, if you prefer to go out against your folk. Outwit your enemy with that which is harmful to them." They asked, "So what is your view?" He said, "You should set out for the district in which Muʿadh b. Juwayn b. Ḥuṣayn advised setting up camp—that is Ḥulwān, or you should set out with us to 'Ayn al-Tamr and stay there. Then, when our brothers heard about us, they would come to us from every side." At that, Ḥayyān b. Zabyān told him, "By God, if you set out with us, you and all your comrades, in either of these directions, you would not rest there before the cavalry of the people of the city overtook you. Where then will you heal yourselves? By God, there are not

136. The Sawād was the "dark" cultivated alluvial plain of Iraq. See EI', s.v. Sawād.
The Events of the Year 58

enough of you to expect victory in the world against the aggressive oppressors thereby. Rebel beside this city of yours and fight according to the command of God against whoever violates obedience to Him. Don't wait, and don't bide your time. Thus, you will hurry to Paradise and get yourselves out of the discord thereby.” They said, “Since that is the case, we have no other choice.” We will not oppose you, so rebel wherever you wish.”

Hayyān waited until it was the end of the first of Ibn Umm al-Ḥakam’s two years (as governor). At the beginning of the (second) year, on the first day of the month of Rabi’ II (January 31, 678), the comrades of Hayyān b. Zabyān gathered to him, and he addressed them, “O folk, God has assembled you for a good purpose and with good reasons. By God, other than Whom there is no god, I would never take pleasure in anything in the world after I abandoned my pleasure in order to make this revolt of mine against the sinful oppressors. By God, I do not want the world in its entirety for myself nor for God to deprive me of martyrdom in this revolt of mine. I had thought that we should go out until we halted beside the house of Jarir. Then, when the factions came out against you, you would fight them.” At that, ‘Itris b. ‘Urqūb al-Bakri said, “However, if we fought them in the center of the city, the men would fight against us while the women and the boys and the slave-girls would ascend [to the rooftops] and throw rocks on us.” One of their men then told them, “Halt us, then, beyond the city [at] al-Jisr”—that was the location of Zurārah; however, Zurārah was built afterwards except for some insignificant buildings that were there previously. Mu’ādh b. Juwayn b. Ḥusayn al-Ṭāʾi advised them, “No, set out with us and halt at Bāniqyā instead. Before long your enemy will come to you, and when that happens we shall confront the folk with our faces and put the houses at our backs. Thus we would fight them from only one direction.” When they rebelled, an army was sent against them and they were all killed.

Then the people of al-Kūfah expelled ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. Umm al-Ḥakam. I was told by Hishām b. Muḥammad: Muʿā-

537. C reads: “we must accept your opinion.”
Between Civil Wars: The Caliphate of Mu'awiyah

Mu'awiyah made Ibn Umm al-Hakam governor over al-Kufah. The latter treated them badly, so they expelled him. He then came to Mu'awiyah, who was his maternal uncle. The latter told him, "I shall make you governor of Egypt [which is] better than al-Kufah." Mu'awiyah did so and sent him there. When the news reached Mu'awiyah b. Hudayj al-Sakuni, he met Ibn Umm al-Hakam two days' journey from Egypt, saying, "Return to your maternal uncle, for, by my life, you shall not treat us the way you treated our Kufan brothers." He then returned to Mu'awiyah. When Mu'awiyah b. Hudayj came (to Damascus) as an envoy, the way had been decorated for him—that is, booths of sweet basil were set up for him. He entered Mu'awiyah's presence while Umm al-Hakam was with him. She asked, "Who is this, O Commander of the Faithful?" He answered, "Speak harshly! This is Mu'awiyah b. Hudayj." She remarked, "No welcome to him. It is better to hear about al-Mu'aydi than to see him." At that, Mu'awiyah b. Hudayj said, "Gently, O Umm al-Hakam. By God, you married but were not honorable, and you gave birth but were not distinguished. You wanted your sinful son to govern us so he would treat us as he treated our Kufan brothers. May God not give him that. Should he do so, we would strike him a blow from which he would bend over, even if the [one who is] sitting disliked that." So Mu'awiyah turned around to her and said, "That's enough."

In this year 'Ubaydallah b. Ziyad became more violent against the Kharijites. He killed a large group of them he held captive and another group in combat. Among the captives he killed was 'Urwah b. Udayyah, the brother of Abū Bilāl Mirdās b. Udayyah.

Why 'Ubaydallah b. Ziyad Killed the Kharijites

I was told by 'Umar—Zuhayr b. Harb—Wahb b. Jarir—his father—'Isā b. 'Āshim al-Asadi: Ibn Ziyad went out for some wager of his. While he sat waiting for the horses, the people gath-

---

539. That is, Mu'awiyah.
540. See Baladhuri, Ansāb, IV B, 77–123.
ered, and 'Urwah b. Udayyah, the brother of Abū Bilāl, was with them. He approached Ibn Ziyād, saying, "There were five faults among the peoples before us, and they have come to exist among us—'Do you build a monument on every height, commit folly, and occupy large structures that perhaps you might be immortal, and if you struck you struck as tyrants?" He mentioned two other faults that Jarīr does not remember. When 'Urwah said that, Ibn Ziyād supposed that he would only have the audacity to say that while a group of his companions was with him, so he rose, rode off, and left his wager. At that 'Urwah was asked, "What have you done? You surely know, by God, that he will kill you." When 'Urwah hid, Ibn Ziyād sought him. He came to al-Kūfah, was seized there, and was sent to Ibn Ziyād, who ordered 'Urwah’s hands and feet to be cut off. Then he summoned him and asked, "What do you think?" 'Urwah replied, "I think that you ruined this world for me and ruined the other world for yourself." At that, 'Ubaydallāh killed him and sent for his daughter and killed her.

As for Mirdās b. Udayyah, he went out to al-Ahwāz. Ibn Ziyād had imprisoned him previously. This is according to the account I was told by 'Umar. He said: Khalīlā b. Yazīd al-Bāhili related to me: Among others, Ibn Ziyād imprisoned Mirdās b. Udayyah. The jailer used to see his manner of worship and his zeal and allowed him to leave at night. When dawn arose, Mirdās would return to him and enter the prison. A friend of Mirdās used to converse with Ibn Ziyād at night, and one night Ibn Ziyād mentioned the Kharijites and decided to kill them in the morning. The friend of Mirdās hurried off to the latter’s residence and informed them of this, saying, "Send word to Abū Bilāl in the prison to let him know, for he is a dead man." Mirdās heard that. The warden also learned the news, whereupon he had a bad night worrying lest Mirdās know the news and not return. When the usual time came for him to return to the prison, all of a sudden there he was. At that, the jailer asked him, "Did you hear what the governor decided to do?"

542. Al-Ahwāz is the province of Khūzistān or its capital city. See EI, s.v. al-Ahwāz, Khūzistān.]
Mirdas replied that he had, the jailer said, "Then you came this morning?" He replied, "Yes! You would not be rewarded for your kindness if you were punished because of me." In the morning 'Ubaydallah came and began to kill the Kharijites. Then he summoned Mirdas, and when the latter was present, the jailer jumped up—he was a milk-brother of 'Ubaydallah—and seized 'Ubaydallah's foot, saying, "Grant me this man," and he related his story to him. 'Ubaydallah then granted Mirdas to the jailer who released him.

I was told by 'Umar—Zuhayr b. Harb—Wahb b. Jarir—his father—Yûnis b. 'Ubayd: Mirdas Abû Bilal, who was one of the Banû Rabî‘ah b. Hanzalah, went out to al-Ahwaz with forty men. Ibn Ziyâd sent an army against them under Ibn Hisn al-Tamîmî. The Kharijites fought against his men and defeated him. At that, a man of the Banû Taym Allah b. Tha‘labah said:

Did you claim two thousand believers are among you, while forty fight them at Asîk?543

You lied. That is not as you claimed, but the Kharijites are believers.

It is the small group [which] as you have known, is made victorious against the large group.544

'Omar said: The last line is not in the account which Khallad b. Yazid al-Bâhili recited to me.

It is said that 'Umayrah b. Yathribi, the judge in al-Baṣrah died in this year and that Hishâm b. Hubayrah replaced him there.

'Abd al-Raḥmân b. Umm al-Ḥakam was in charge of al-Kûfah in this year. Some of them said that al-Ḍâḥhâk b. Qays al-Fihîrî was in charge there, while 'Ubaydallah b. Ziyâd was in charge of al-Baṣrah and Shurayh was in charge of rendering judgment at al-Kûfah.

Al-Walid b. Utbah led the people in the pilgrimage this year. This is also what Abû Ma‘shar and al-Wâqidi said.

543. Asîk or Asak was a district of al-Ahwaz between Arrajân and Râmhurmuz. See Yâqût, Buldân, I, 61–2.
544. This is probably an allusion to the Battle of Badr.
The winter campaign of 'Amr b. Murrah al-Juhani by land in Byzantine territory occurred during this year. According to al-Waqqidi, there was no raid by sea that year, although others said that Junādah b. Abi Umayyah raided by sea.

During this year 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Umm al-Ḥakam was dismissed from al-Kūfah and al-Nu'mān b. Bashīr al-Anṣārī was appointed governor there. We have mentioned previously the reason for Ibn Umm al-Ḥakam’s dismissal from al-Kūfah.

In this year Mu'āwiyah made 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Ziyād b. Sumayyah governor of Khurāsān.

Why Mu'āwiyah Appointed 'Abd al-Rahmān b.
Ziyād as Governor of Khurāsān

I was told by al-Ḥārith b. Muḥammad—'Ali b. Muḥammad—Abū 'Amr—our shaykhs: 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Ziyād came to visit Mu'āwiyah, and asked, “O Commander of the Faithful, don’t we have a claim [on you]?” Mu'āwiyah replied that he did. 'Abd al-Rahmān then asked, “So why don’t you make me a
governor?” He replied, “Al-Nu‘mān at al-Kūfah is on the right course, and he is one of the Companions of the Prophet. ’Ubaydallāh b. Ziyād is in charge of al-Baṣraḥ and Khurāsān, and ’Abbād b. Ziyād is in charge of Sijistān. I don’t see a position which is appropriate for you unless I have you share in the position of your brother, ’Ubaydallāh.” He said, “Give me a share, for his governorship is so extensive he can stand a partnership.” Thereupon, Mu‘āwiyyah made him governor of Khurāsān.


(According to) ‘Alī—‘Awānah: ’Abd al-Raḥmān b. Ziyād came to Yazīd b. Mu‘āwiyyah from Khurāsān after the killing of al-Ḥusayn,545 while he made Qays b. al-Haytham deputy over Khurāsān. (According to) ‘Alī—Muslim b. Muhārib and Abū Ḥaṣṣ: Yazīd asked ’Abd al-Raḥmān b. Ziyād, “How much wealth did you bring with you from Khurāsān?” he replied, “Twenty million dirhams.” Yazīd said, “If you wish, we would ask you for an accounting and collect it from you and return you to your governorship. Or, if you wish, we would allow you [to keep it] and dismiss you, provided that you give ’Abdallāh b. Ja’far [b. Abi Ṭālib] five hundred thousand dirhams.” ’Abd al-Raḥmān answered, “Rather allow me what you just said, and put someone else in charge there.” ’Abd al-Raḥmān b. Ziyād sent one million dirhams to ’Abdallāh b. Ja’far, saying, “Five hundred thousand are from the Commander of the Faithful and five hundred thousand are from me.”

In this year ’Ubaydallāh b. Ziyād went to visit Mu‘āwiyyah accompanied by the Baṣraḥ notables. Mu‘āwiyyah dismissed

545. Al-Ḥusayn b. ’Ali was killed on the tenth of Muharram 61 (October 10, 680).
'Ubaydallāh from al-Baṣraḥ, then he put him in charge of it again and confirmed the governorship for him.

_How Muʿāwiya Dismissed and Re-appointed 'Ubaydallāh as Governor of al-Baṣraḥ_

I was told by 'Umar—'Ali: 'Ubaydallāh b. Ziyād went to visit Muʿāwiya with the people of Iraq. Muʿāwiya told him, "I will receive your delegation according to their stations and their dignity." Thus they were permitted to enter, al-Aḥnaf entered with the last of them, since his station was low according to 'Ubaydallāh. When Muʿāwiya observed him, he welcomed al-Aḥnaf and had him sit with him on his dais. Then he conversed with the folk, and they praised 'Ubaydallāh nicely, while al-Aḥnaf was silent. Muʿāwiya then asked, "What's the matter with you, O Abū Bahr? You don't speak." Al-Aḥnaf replied, "If I should converse, I would contradict the folk." At that, Muʿāwiya announced, "Stand up, for I have dismissed him. Seek a governor whom you approve." Every one of the folk then went to ask one of the Banū Umayyah or one of the Syrian notables. Al-Aḥnaf stayed in his home and did not go to anyone. They spent several days (doing this). Muʿāwiya then sent for them and assembled them. When they entered his presence, he asked, "Whom did you choose?" They disagreed, and each of their factions named someone (else), while al-Aḥnaf was silent. Muʿāwiya then asked him, "What's the matter with you, O Abū Bahr? You don't speak." Al-Aḥnaf replied, "If you make anyone of your family governor over us, we would not consider anyone equal to 'Ubaydallāh, and if you would make anyone else governor, then consider doing so." Muʿāwiya said, "I have put him back in charge of you." Then he recommended him to al-Aḥnaf, and rebuked the latter's view because he had caused alienation. When the civil strife broke out, no one fulfilled (his obligation) to 'Ubaydallāh except al-Aḥnaf.

During this year, the affair of Yazīd b. Mufarrigh al-Himyari and 'Abbād b. Ziyād occurred, as well as Yazīd's ridiculing the sons of Ziyād.
Why Yazīd b. Mufarrigh Ridiculed the Sons of Ziyād

I reported on the authority of Abū 'Ubaydah Ma'mar b. al-Muthannā that Yazīd b. Rabi'ah b. Mufarrigh al-Ḥimyari accompanied 'Abbād b. Ziyād in Sijistān. He was engaged in war against the Turks for 'Abbād, who was impatient with him. When the army with 'Abbād was concerned about fodder for their mounts, Ibn Mufarrigh said:\footnote{See Isfahāni, Aghānī, XVII, 53.}

If only the beards would turn into hay, we would feed it to the horses of the Muslims.

'Abbād b. Ziyād had a large beard, so that when Ibn Mufarrigh's poem reached 'Abbād, the latter was told, "He meant only you." At that, 'Abbād sought him, but he fled from 'Abbād and satirized him in many qaṣīdahs. Among those verses in which he satirized 'Abbād were:\footnote{See Isfahāni, Aghānī, XVII, 57.}

If Muʿāwiyah son of Ḥarb should perish, spread the good news of a crack to the folk of your cauldron.

So testify that your mother was not touched by Abū Sufyān, taking off the veil,

But it was a matter about which there is uncertainty, in great fear and alarm,

and:\footnote{See Isfahāni, Aghānī, XVII, 60.}

Tell Muʿāwiyah son of Ḥarb of a penetration by the Yamānī man.

Are you angry that it be said, "Your father was virtuous" and pleased that it be said, "Your father was an adulterer"?

So I testify that your relationship with Ziyād is like the kinship of the elephant with the offspring of a she-ass.

\footnote{See Isfahāni, Aghānī, XVII, 53.}
\footnote{See Isfahāni, Aghānī, XVII, 57.}
\footnote{See Isfahāni, Aghānī, XVII, 60.}
Abū Zayd (said): When Ibn Mufarrigh satirized 'Abbād he left him and came to al-Baṣrah while 'Ubaydallāh was visiting Mu'āwiyyah. 'Abbād then wrote to 'Ubaydallāh some of the lines in which Ibn Mufarrigh satirized him. When 'Ubaydallāh read the poetry, he entered Mu'āwiyyah's presence, recited the lines to him, and asked permission to kill Ibn Mufarrigh. But Mu'āwiyyah refused to let 'Ubaydallāh kill him, saying, "Punish him, but don't go so far as to kill him." Ibn Mufarrigh reached al-Baṣrah and sought refuge with al-Aḥnaf b. Qays, who said, "We do not give refuge against Ibn Sumayyah. If you wish, I would protect you from the poets of the Banū Tamim." Ibn Mufarrigh replied, "That is not what I need to be protected against." He then came to Khālid b. 'Abdallāh who threatened him, and then to Umayyah and to 'Umar b. 'Ubaydallāh b. Ma'mar, both of whom threatened him. Finally he came to al-Mundhir b. Jarūd, who protected him and brought him into his house. Since Bahriyyah bt. al-Mundhir was 'Ubaydallāh's wife, when the latter reached al-Baṣrah, he was informed that Ibn Mufarrigh was staying with al-Mundhir. When al-Mundhir came to greet 'Ubaydallāh, the latter sent the police to the house of al-Mundhir, and they seized Ibn Mufarrigh. Before al-Mundhir even realized it, while he was with 'Ubaydallāh, there was Ibn Mufarrigh standing before him. At that, al-Mundhir stood up before 'Ubaydallāh, saying, "O amir, I have given him refuge." 'Ubaydallāh replied, "By God, O Mundhir, he praises you and your father while he ridicules me and my father. Then you protect him against me." 'Ubaydallāh ordered for him to be given a laxative to drink. He was to be carried on a donkey with saddle-bags on it. The donkey began to be led about with him on it, while he defecated in his clothing. As he was led through the markets that way, a Persian passed by him, saw him, and asked about him in Persian, "What is this?" Ibn Mufarrigh understood Persian, so he said,
It is water, it is date wine,
It is the juice of raisins,
And it is white-faced Sumayyah.

Then he satirized al-Mundhir b. al-Jārūd:

I renounced being a neighbor of Quraysh,
and was a neighbor of the 'Abd al-Qays, folk of al-Mushaqqaq.

People who protect us, for their protection was spreading whirlwinds of a fart of Iraq.

So my neighbor from Jadhimah went to sleep,
and only the hard working [person] protects the protected.

He also said to 'Ubaydallāh:

Water will cleanse what you did, but my declaration is firmly fixed for you, as long as the bones last.

Then 'Ubaydallāh transported him to 'Abbād in Sijistān. At that, the Yamanīs interceded with Mu'āwiyah for him in Syria, so he sent a messenger to 'Abbād. 'Abbād then sent Ibn Mufarrigh to Mu'āwiyah. On the way he said:

O 'Adas! 'Abbād does not have authority over you. Escape, while you carry this [one], freed.

By my life, he has saved you from the abyss of ruin, leader and rope for mankind, strong.

I shall thank you for what good favor you render, and the likes of me ought to thank benefactors.

552. The text reads rūṣ-yi sepīd, that is, notorious.
553. See Īṣlahānī, Aghānī, XVII, 57.
554. Al-Mushaqqaq was a fortress belonging to the 'Abd al-Qays. It guarded the approach to the town of Hajar in al-Bahrayn. See Yaqūt, Mu'jam, IV, 541.
555. Jadhimah b. 'Awf was the branch of the 'Abd al-Qays to which al-Mundhir b. al-Jārūd belonged. See EI3, s.v. 'Abd al-Ḳays.
556. From a long qaṣīdah in Īṣlahānī, Aghānī, XVII, 57-8.
557. These lines are also in Īṣlahānī, Aghānī, XVII, 60; and Ibn Qutaybah, Shi'r, 180, with variants. 'Adas is either the name of the mule he was riding or the command used to make mules go. See Wright, Grammar, I, 295.
When he entered Mu‘āwiyah’s presence, he wept, saying, “What was done to me would not have been done to any Muslim except for a crime or offense.” Mu‘āwiyah asked, “Are you not the one who recites the qaṣīdah beginning:

Tell Mu‘āwiyah son of Ḥarb,  
about a penetration by the Yamānī man?”

Ibn Mufarrigh replied, “No, by that which magnified truth for the Commander of the Faithful, I did not say that.” Mu‘āwiyah inquired “Did you not say:

So testify that your mother was never touched,  
by Abū Suḥyān, throwing down the veil,  

among much poetry in which you ridiculed Ibn Ziyād? Go, for I have forgiven you for your offense. However, if you should deal with us [again], what has happened would be nothing [compared to what will happen]. So, be off with you, and settle in any land you wish.” Ibn Mufarrigh then settled at Mosul. Then he wanted to go to al-Baṣrah. Upon reaching it, he entered the presence of ‘Ubaydallāh who gave him a guarantee of safe-conduct.

As for ‘Abū ‘Ubaydah, he recounted Ibn Mufarrigh’s settling at Mosul, according to what Abū Zayd told me: He related that when Mu‘āwiyah asked, “Are you not the one who recites the lines:

Tell Mu‘āwiyah son of Ḥarb,  
about a penetration by the Yamānī man?”

Ibn Mufarrigh swore that he did not say it, but that ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. al-Ḥakam, the brother of Marwān, said it instead. He also swore that ‘Abd al-Raḥmān imitated him as a means of ridiculing Ziyād, and that he used to reprove ‘Abd al-Raḥmān. At that, Mu‘āwiyah was angry with ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. al-Ḥakam and withheld his stipend until he hurt him. When someone interceded with Mu‘āwiyah for ‘Abd al-Raḥmān, he said, “I will not be pleased with him until ‘Ubaydallāh is pleased.” ‘Abd al-Raḥmān then came to ‘Ubaydallāh in Iraq, telling him:
You [and] Ziyād in the family of Ḥarb, [are] dearer to me than one of my fingertips.

I regard you as a brother, a maternal uncle, and a cousin, and I do not know what you think of me privately.

‘Ubaydallāh was pleased with him and replied, “By God, I think you are a poor poet.” Mu‘awiyah then asked Ibn Mufarrigh, “Are you not the one who recites the lines:

So testify that your mother was never touched, by Abū Sufyān, throwing down the veil?

Don’t do it again. We forgive you.”

Ibn Mufarrigh proceeded until he settled at Mosul and got married. The morning after the night on which the marriage was consummated, he went out to hunt. He met an oil merchant or a perfume dealer on an ass of his. Ibn Mufarrigh inquired, “Where have you come from?” The merchant replied, “From al-Ahwāz.” Ibn Mufarrigh asked, “How is the water of Masruqān doing?” He answered, “As usual.” Ibn Mufarrigh then left and headed toward al-Baṣrah; his family did not know that he had gone. He proceeded until he came to ‘Ubaydallāh at al-Baṣrah and entered his presence, and the latter granted him a guaranteed safe-conduct. Ibn Mufarrigh stayed with him until he asked permission to leave for Kirmān. ‘Ubaydallāh allowed him to do so, and wrote to his official there to take care of and respect him. Ibn Mufarrigh then left for Kirmān, while at that time the official of ‘Ubaydallāh in charge there was Sharīk b. al-A‘war al-Ḥārithī.

In this year ‘Uthmān b. Muḥammad b. Abī Sufyān led the people in the pilgrimage. I was told that by ʿAḥmad b. Thābit—someone—Iṣḥāq b. ʿĪsā—Abū Ma‘ṣhar. Al-Wāqīḍī and others said the same.

---

558. Masruqān was a canal famous for its white water near Shustar in Khūzistān. See Le Strange, Lands, 236.


The governor in charge of al-Madinah was al-Walid b. 'Utbah b. Abi Sufyân. Al-Nu'mân b. Bashîr was in charge of al-Kufsah, while Shurayh was in charge of rendering judgment there. 'Ubaydallah b. Ziyâd was in charge of al-Bqrah, while Hishâm b. Hubayrah was in charge of rendering judgment there. 'Abd al-Rahmân b. Ziyâd was in charge of Khurásân while 'Abbâd b. Ziyâd was in charge of Sijistân and Sharîk b. al-A'war was in charge of Kirmân for 'Ubaydallah b. Ziyâd.
The Events of the Year

60

[October 13, 679–September 30, 680]

According to al-Wâqidi, the raid of Malik b. 'Abdallâh against Sawriyah happened in this year, as well as Junâdah b. Abî Umayyah's entry into Rûdas and his destruction of its city.

During this year also, Mu'âwiyyah imposed the declaration of allegiance to his son, Yazîd, on the delegation that came to him with 'Ubaydallâh b. Ziyâd. When Mu'âwiyyah became ill this year, he entrusted to his son, Yazîd, what he did concerning the group that had refused to declare allegiance to Yazîd when he had summoned them to do so. Mu'âwiyyah's agreement was what Hishâm b. Muḥammad related according to Abû Mîkhnaf—'Abd al-Malik b. Nawfal b. Musâhiq b. 'Abdallâh b. Makhra-mah: When Mu'âwiyyah became sick with the illness from which he perished, he summoned his son, Yazîd, saying:

O my son, I have spared you the effort, made things smooth for you, subdued enemies for you, subjected the necks of the Arabs for you, and created unity for you. I am only afraid that four individuals of Quraysh might challenge you for this matter which was established for you—al-Ḥusayn b. 'Ali, 'Abdallâh b. 'Umar, 'Abdallâh b. al-Zu-
bayr, and 'Abd al-Raḥmān b. Abī Bakr. As far as 'Abdallāh b. 'Umar is concerned, he is a man whom righteousness has overwhelmed, and if no one else were left, he would acknowledge you. As far as al-Ḥusayn is concerned, the people of Iraq will not leave him alone until they make him rebel. If he rebels against you, and you should defeat him, then pardon him, because he has close kinship and a great claim. As far as Ibn Abī Bakr is concerned, he is a man, who, if he should see his companions doing something, he would do likewise. He is only interested in women and pleasure. As for the one who crouches for you as a crouching lion and tricks you as a sly fox, and if an opportunity enables him he would spring, that is Ibn al-Zubayr. If he does that to you, and you are able to overpower him, then tear him limb from limb.

(According to) Hishām—'Awānah: We have heard in another account that when Muʿāwiyah was on the verge of death, which was in this year, Yazīd was absent. Muʿāwiyah summoned al-Dahhāk b. Qāys al-Fihrī, who was the head of his police, and Muslim b. 'Uqbah al-Murri and counseled them saying:

Tell Yazīd my testament: Pay attention to the people of the Hijāz for they are your root. Honor whomever of them should come to you, and take care of whomever is absent. Pay attention to the people of Iraq, and if they ask you to dismiss one of their officials every day, do so. For I would rather have a governor be dismissed than for one hundred thousands swords to be unsheathed against you. Pay attention to the people of Syria, for they are your entourage and your leather bag. If something should befall you from your enemy, be victorious with them. When you are successful with them, return the people of Syria to their land. For if they should stay in another land than their own, they would take on other characteristics than their own. I only fear three persons of the Quraysh—Ḥusayn b. 'Ali, 'Abdallāh b. 'Umar, and 'Abdallāh b. al-Zubayr. As far as Ibn 'Umar is concerned, he is a man whom religion has overwhelmed, so he would not ask anything from you. As far
as al-Ḥusayn b. ‘Ali is concerned, he is an insignificant man, and I hope that God would protect you from him by means of those who killed his father and deserted his brother. He has close kinship, a great claim, and is a relative of Muhammad. I don’t think the people of Iraq would leave him alone until they make him rebel. If you should overpower him pardon him, for if I were his master, I would pardon him. As far as Ibn al-Zubayr is concerned, he is a heaving reptile, so if he appears to you, stick to him unless he asks for peace from you. If he does, then accept it and spare the blood of your folk as much as you can.

In this year Mu‘awiyah b. Abī Sufyān perished at Damascus. The time of his death was disputed apart from general agreement that his death occurred in the month of Rajab 60 (April 7–May 6, 680) of the *hijrah.*[^561] Hishām b. Muḥammad (said): Mu‘awiyah died at the new moon of Rajab 60 (April 7, 680). Al-Wāqiqī (said): Mu‘awiyah died on the ides of Rajab (April, 21, 680). 'Ali b. Muḥammad: Mu‘awiyah died at Damascus on a Thursday, eight days before the end of Rajab 60 (April 29, 680). Al-Ḥārith told me that according to ‘Ali.

*The Length of Mu‘awiyah’s Reign*

I was told by Ahmad b. Thābit al-Rāzi—someone—Iṣḥāq b. ‘Īsā—Abū Ma’shar: Mu‘awiyah was acknowledged (as caliph) at Adhruh. Al-Ḥasan b. ‘Ali acknowledged him in Jumādah I 41 (September 2–October 1, 661) and Mu‘awiyah died in Rajab 60 (April 7–May 6, 680). His Caliphate lasted nineteen years and three months.

I was told by al-Ḥārith—Muḥammad b. Sa’d—Muḥammad b. ‘Umar—Yahyā b. Sa‘īd b. Dīnār al-Sa‘dī—his father: Mu‘awiyah died Thursday night on the ides of Rajab 60 (April 21, 680) and his Caliphate lasted nineteen years, three months and seventeen days.

I was told by ‘Umar—‘Ali: The Syrians acknowledged Mu‘awiyah as Caliph in Dhū al-Qa‘dah 37 (April 10–May 9, 658).

[^561]: According to Ibn Khayyāt, *Ta‘rikh,* I, 272, Mu‘awiyah died on a Thursday, eight days before the end of Rajab 59 (May 10, 679).
The Events of the Year 60

when the two arbiters split. They had previously acknowledged him in order to demand (vengeance) for the blood of 'Uthmān. Then al-Ḥasan b. 'Alī made peace with him and turned over matters to him in the year 41, five days before the end of the month of Rabi' I (July 31, 661). At that, the people as a whole acknowledged Mu'āwiya, so it was called "the year of the concord." He died at Damascus, in the year 60, Thursday, eight days before the end of Rajab (April 29, 680). His rule lasted nineteen years, three months and twenty-seven days. It is also said that there were nineteen years, ten months and three nights between the death of 'Ali and the death of Mu'āwiya. Hishām b. Muḥammad (said): Mu'āwiya was acknowledged as Caliph in Jumādah I 41 (September 2—October 1, 661). He thus ruled nineteen years and three months except for a few days. Then he died at the new moon of Rajab 60 (April 7, 680).

There is also disagreement about his age and how long he lived. Some said he was seventy-five years old on the day he died.

I was told by 'Umar—Muhammad b. Yahyā—Hishām b. al-Walid—Ibn Shihāb al-Zuhri: Al-Walid asked me about the life span of the Caliphs, so I informed him that Mu'āwiya was seventy-five years old when he died. At that, he exclaimed, "Bravo! Indeed that is a lifetime." Others said he was seventy-three years old when he died.

I was told by 'Umar—Aḥmad b. Zuhayr—'Alī b. Muḥammad: Mu'āwiya was seventy-three years old when he died. He is also said to have been eighty years old, while others said he was seventy-eight years old when he died.

I was told by al-Ḥārith—Muhammad b. Sa'd—Muḥammad b. 'Umar—Yahyā b. Sa'id b. Dinar—his father: Mu'āwiya died when he was seventy-eight years old. Others said he died when he was eighty-five years old. I was told that by Hishām b. Muḥammad, who reported this according to his father.

Mu'āwiya's Last Illness

I was told by al-Ḥārith—Muhammad b. Sa'd—Abū 'Ubaydah—Abū Ya'qūb al-Ṭhaqafi—'Abd al-Malik b. 'Umayr: When Mu'āwiya felt heavy, and the people reported that it was
death (approaching), he said to his family, “Put antimony all around my eyes, and anoint my head with oil.” They did so and made his face shine with oil. Then it was arranged for him to sit. He said, “Prop me up.” Then he said, “Allow the people to greet [me] standing, and let no one sit.” Men then began to enter and greet [him] standing and to see him treated with kohl and with oil. He was saying, “The people will say that at his end he was the healthiest of people.” When they left his presence, Mu‘awiyah said:

By my posing for the gloaters by whom I am seen,
indeed I am not ruined by the uncertainties of time.

And when destiny digs in its claws
You will find that every amulet is useless.

He had discharges, and died that very day.

I was told by Ahmad b. Zuhayr—‘Ali b. Muḥammad—Ishāq b. Ayyūb—‘Abd al-Malik b. Mīnās al-Kalbī: Mu‘awiyah told his two daughters during his last illness, while they were turning him over, “Turn over this shrewd person deftly, [who] accumulated wealth from youth to creeping if he does not enter Hell Fire.” Then he quoted:

I have endeavored for you as the runner who is fatigued,
and I have saved you from traveling and departure.

This is said to be from the collection of a reliable person.

I was told by Ahmad b. Zuhayr—‘Ali—Sulaymān b. Ayyūb al-Awazā‘ī and ‘Ali b. Mujāhid—al-A‘lā b. Maymūn—his father: Mu‘awiyah said during his last illness, “Indeed the Messenger of God clothed me with a shirt. One day I held it up while he pared his nails. I then took his parings and put them in a long-necked bottle. So when I die clothe me in that shirt and cut up those parings, grind them up, and sprinkle them in my eyes and in my mouth. Thus God might have mercy on me by their blessing [barakah].” Then he quoted the poem of al-

---

562. See Mubārrad, Kāmil, 784.
563. From the proverb: “It fatigued me from youth to creeping,” said of someone who accumulates from youth until he walks slowly leaning on a staff. See Maydānī, Amthāl, II, 7; Freytag, Proverbia, II, 78.
Ashhab b. Rumaylah al-Nahshali in which he praises al-Qubā':

When you die, generosity will die and liberality will cease among people except for a few, ice cold.

And the hands of beggars will be turned back and held fast out of religion and the world by a renewing successor.

At that, one of his daughters or someone else said, "Certainly not, O Commander of the Faithful, may God remove [it] from you instead" He then quoted:

And when destiny digs in its claws,
you will find that every amulet is useless.

Then he went blind, but afterwards recovered his sight and told those members of his family who attended him, "Fear God, Almighty and Great, for God, praise Him, protects whoever fears Him, and there is no protector for one who does not fear God." Then he passed away.

I was told by Aḥmad—‘Alī—Muḥammad b. al-Ḥakam—someone: When Mu‘āwiya died, he ordered for half of his wealth to be returned to the treasury, hoping that the remainder would be good for him, because the Caliph 'Umar had shared with his officials.

Who Led the Prayer over Mu‘āwiya When He Died

I was told by Aḥmad b. Zuhayr—‘Alī b. Muḥammad: Al-Dahḥak b. Qays al-Fihrī led the prayer over Mu‘āwiya, while Yazīd was absent, when Mu‘āwiya died. I was also told by Hishām b. Muḥammad—Abū Mīkhnaf—‘Abd al-Malik b. Nawfal b. Musāhiq b. ‘Abdallāh b. Makhramah. When Mu‘āwiya died, al-Dahḥak b. Qays went out and ascended the pulpit, while Mu‘āwiya's shrouds were visible in his hands. After he praised and extolled God, he said, "Indeed Mu‘āwiya was the

---

564. Al-Qubā' was al-Ḥārith b. 'Abdallah b. Abī Rabi'ah al-Makhzūmi, the brother of the poet 'Umar b. 'Abdallah b. Abī Rabi'ah al-Makhzūmi. See Mubarrad, Kāmil, 624.

Between Civil Wars: The Caliphate of Mu'āwiyah

stick of the Arabs and the blade of the Arabs, by means of whom God, Almighty and Great, cut off strife, whom He made sovereign over mankind, by means of whom he conquered countries, but now he has died and these are his shrouds. We are wrapping him in them and putting him in his grave, and leaving him and his work. Then there will be the interval until the Day of Resurrection. Whoever of you has wanted to see him, be present at dawn worship." He also sent a courier to Yazid concerning Mu'āwiyah's pain. Yazid said about that:

The courier has brought a parchment, the rider trots with it, so the heart was apprehensive of its parchment and alarmed.

We said, "Woe unto you, what is in your letter?"
They said, "The Caliph has certainly felt pain."

So the earth was shaken or was about to be shaken under us, as if it raised dust from its severed foundations.

One whose person continues to exceed nobility, the keys of that person are about to drop.

When we arrived, while the door of the house was shut, and [heard] the voice of Ramlah, the heart was alarmed, so it broke.

I was told by 'Umar—'Alī—Isḥāq b. Khulayd—Khulayd b. 'Ajlān, the mawla of 'Abbād: Mu'āwiyah died while Yazīd was at Huwwārīn; they had written to him when Mu'āwiyah had fallen ill. Yazid arrived after Mu'āwiyah had been buried, so he came to his grave and worshipped over him and prayed for him. Then he came to his residence and recited the lines:

The courier has brought a parchment . . .

566. Qur'ān 23:102. The barzakh is the interval or barrier between this life and the next, between Hell and Paradise, or between the material and spiritual worlds. See EI, s.v. Barzakh.
567. See Islahani, Aghani, XVI, 33.
568. C reads: Hawrān, the mountainous plateau south of Damascus. See EI, s.v. Hawrān. Huwwārīn was the location of two villages, two days' journey from Tadmur (Palmyra), where Yazid b. Mu'āwiyah died in 64/683/4
Mu'awiyah's Lineage and His Agnomen

As for Mu'awiyah's lineage, he was the son of Abu Sufyan. Abu Sufyan's name was Sakhr b. Harb b. Umayyah b. 'Abd Shams b. 'Abd Manat b. Quṣayy b. Kilāb. Mu'awiyah's mother was Hind bt. 'Utbah b. 'Abd Shams b. 'Abd Manāf b. Quṣayy. His patronymic [kunyah] was Abu 'Abd al-Rahmān.

Mu'awiyah's Wives and Children

One of his wives was Maysūn bt. Bahdal b. Unayf b. Waljah b. Qurāfah b. 'Adi b. Zuhayr b. Ḥārithah b. Janāb al-Kalbi. She bore Yazīd b. Mu'awiyah for him. 'Alī said: In addition to Yazīd, Maysūn bore Mu'awiyah a girl, Rabb al-Masāriq, but she died young, and Hishām did not mention her among the children of Mu'awiyah. Among his wives was also Fākhithah bt. Qarażah b. 'Abd 'Amr b. Nawfal b. 'Abd Manāf. She bore Mu'awiyah two sons, 'Abd al-Rahmān and 'Abdallāh. 'Abdallāh was foolish and frail and was nicknamed Abū al-Khayr. I was told by Aḥmad—'Ali b. Muḥammad: One day 'Abdallāh b. Mu'awiyah passed a miller who had tied his mule to the mill for the flour and put bells on his neck. So he asked the miller, "Why did you put these bells on the neck of your mule?" The miller answered, "I put them on its neck in order to know if it should stop and not turn the mill." 'Abdallāh then asked, "Have you considered how you would know that he was not turning the mill if he should stop and shake his head?" The miller told him, "This mule, may God make the amir prosper, does not have intelligence like that of the amir." As for 'Abd al-Rahmān, he died young.

Among his wives was Nā'īlah bt. 'Umārah al-Kalbi. I was told by Aḥmad—'Ali: When Mu'awiyah married Nā'īlah he told Maysūn, "Go off and observe the daughter of your paternal uncle" After she had observed her, he asked, "How did she look to you?" She answered, "Perfectly beautiful, but I saw a mole beneath her navel where the head of her husband will certainly be put in her lap" At that, Mu'awiyah divorced her,

569. A kunyah is an agnomen, named after a son.
and Ḥabib b. Maslamah al-Fihri married her. Then after Ḥabib, al-Nuʿmān b. Bashir al-Anṣārī married her. Al-Nuʿmān was killed and his head was put in her lap. Among Muʿāwiyah’s wives was Katwah bt. Qaraẓah, the sister of Fākhitah. He raided Cyprus while she was with him, and she died there.

Some of Muʿāwiyah’s Affairs and Conduct

I was told by Ahmad b. Zuhayr—ʿAli: When allegiance was rendered to Muʿāwiyah as Caliph, he put Qays b. Ḥamzah al-Hamdānī in charge of his police. Then he dismissed him and appointed Zumayl b. ‘Amr al-ʿUdhri, or al-Saksaki. Muʿāwiyah’s secretary and the person in charge of his business was Sarjun b. Mansūr al-Rūmī. One of his mawāli called al-Mukhtar was in charge of his guard (ḥaras). This is also said to have been a man called Mālik, who was nicknamed Abū al-Mukhtār, a mawlā of Himyar. Muʿāwiyah was the first to make use of bodyguards. Saʿd, his mawlā, was in charge of his gatekeepers. Fadālāh b. ʿUtbaḥ al-Anṣārī was in charge of rendering judgment. When Fadālāh died, Muʿāwiyah appointed Abū Idrīs ʿAʿīdhallāh b. ʿAbdallāh al-Khawlānī to render judgment.

So far this has been the account of Ahmad according to ʿAli. Others than ʿAli said: ʿAbdallāh b. Miḥṣan al-Ḥimyari was in

570. Cyprus was attacked by Muʿāwiyah in 28(648/9) See EP, s.v. Kubrus.
571. Zumayl b. ʿAmr (or Zamal b. Rabīʿah) b. al-ʿAnaz b. Khassāb b. Khudayj al-ʿUdhri had been a member of his tribe’s delegation to Muhammad. The latter gave him a standard which he kept until he fought at Siffin along with Muʿāwiyah, where he was one of the witnesses to the arbitration agreement. He witnessed the rendering of allegiance (bayʿah) to Marwān at Jābiyah, and died at the battle of Marj Rāḥīf in 64(683/4) See Ibn al-Athir, Usd, II, 205; and Ibn Hajar, Isābah, I, 551, II, 19. For a slightly different account see Ibn Khayyāt, Taʿrikh, I, 276.
573. Ibid.: Abū Ayyūb.
574. Fadālāh b. ʿUtbaḥ [or ʿUbayd] al-Anṣārī [d. 53(673)] was a Companion of Muhammad at Ḥudaybiyah, participated in the conquest of Egypt, and settled in Syria where Muʿāwiyah put him in charge of rendering judgment at Damascus when he went to Siffin. He also led sea raids against the Byzantines. See Ibn al-Athir, Usd, IV, 182.
575. Abū Idrīs ʿAʿīdhallāh b. ʿAbdallāh al-Khawlānī [9-ca. 86 [630-ca. 705]] one of the greatest of the Followers, was judge at Damascus from 53(673) until his death. See Ibn al-Athir, Usd, III, 99, V, 134.
charge of the department of the seal. Mu‘awiyyah was the first one who used a department of the seal. The reason for that was that Mu‘awiyyah ordered one hundred thousand dirhams for ‘Amr b. al-Zubayr to relieve the latter of his debts. Mu‘awiyyah wrote about that to Ziyād b. Sumayyah while the latter was in charge of Iraq. ‘Amr then opened the letter and changed the one hundred to two hundred. When Ziyād presented his invoice, Mu‘awiyyah disclaimed it, required ‘Amr to return the money, and imprisoned him. His brother, ‘Abdallāh b. al-Zubayr, paid it on his behalf. At that, Mu‘awiyyah established the department of the seal, and he tied up letters, which had not been tied (before).576

I was told by ‘Abdallāh b. Aḥmad b. Shabbawayh—his father—Sulaymān—‘Abdallāh b. al-Mubārik—Ibn Abī Dhi‘b—Sa‘īd al-Maqburi577—‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb: You speak of Kisrā and Qaysār and their shrewdness while Mu‘awiyyah is with you!

I was told by ‘Abdallāh b. Aḥmad—his father—Sulaymān: I read—‘Abdallāh—Fulayḥ: I was told that when ‘Amr b. al-‘Āṣ visited Mu‘awiyyah with the Egyptians, ‘Amr told them, “Pay attention when you enter the presence of Ibn Hind lest you greet him as Caliph. That will make you great in his eyes. Reduce him as much as you can.” When they came to him, Mu‘awiyyah told his gate-keepers, “Indeed, as I know Ibn al-Nābighah, he will have reduced my position with the folk, so pay attention when the delegation enters, shake them as strongly as you can, and don’t let a single one of them reach me unless he is concerned about his own destruction.” The first one who entered his presence was an Egyptian called Ibn al-Khayyāt. He entered shaken, saying, “Peace be upon you, O Messenger of God!” The folk did that in succession, and when they left, ‘Amr told them, “God curse you! I forbade you to greet him as amir, so you greeted him as Prophet.”

One day Mu‘awiyyah wore his black turban and lined his eyelids with kohl, and he was the most handsome person when he

576. Ibn Khayyāt, Ta‘rīkh, I, 276, adds that ‘Ubayd b. Aws al-Ghassānī was Mu‘awiyyah’s correspondence secretary (kātib al-rasā’il).
did that. ‘Abdallāh doubted whether he heard that about him or not.

I was told by Āḥmad b. Zuhayr—‘Ālī b. Muḥammad—Abū Muḥammad al-‘Umawī: ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb left for Syria and saw Mu‘āwiyah come to receive him with a procession; Mu‘āwiyah had gone out to ‘Umar with a retinue. At that, ‘Umar told him, “O Mu‘āwiyah, you go with a retinue, and you leave in the same way. I heard that you start the day in your residence while petitioners are at your door.” Mu‘āwiyah replied, “O Commander of the Faithful, our enemy is close to us, and they have scouts and spies, so I wanted, O Commander of the Faithful, for them to see that Islam has power.” ‘Umar answered, “This is the ruse of an intelligent man or the deception of a clever man.” Mu‘āwiyah then said, “O Commander of the Faithful, instruct me with what you want and I shall fulfill it.” ‘Umar replied, “Woe unto you! Whenever we discuss something which I disapprove of you doing, you leave me not knowing whether I should order you to do it or forbid you.”

I was told by ‘Abdallāh b. Āḥmad—his father—Sulaymān—‘Abdallāh—Ma‘mar—Ja‘far b. Burqān: Al-Mughirah wrote to Mu‘āwiyah, “Now then, indeed my age has become great, my bones are frail, and the Quraysh detest me, so if you see fit to dismiss me, do so.” Mu‘āwiyah wrote back to him, “Your letter reached me in which you state that your age became great, and by my life, no one but you consumed your life. You state that the Quraysh detest you, and by my life, you obtain good only from them. Since you ask me to dismiss you, I have done so. If you were sincere, I have satisfied you; but if you were deceiving, then I have cheated you.”

I was told by Āḥmad—‘Ali b. Muḥammad—‘Ali b. Muḥājīd: Mu‘āwiyah said, “If an Umawī were not taking care of his wealth prudently, he would not be like one of them. And if a Ḥāshimī were not generous and magnanimous, he would not be like one of them. However, you don’t hear about the eloquence, generosity and courage of the Ḥāshimī.

I was told by Āḥmad—‘Ali—‘Awānah and Khallād b. ‘Ubaydah: Mu‘āwiyah had lunch one day while ‘Ubaydallāh b. Abī Bakr and his son, Bāṣhir, were with him—it is also said, someone other than Bāṣhir—so he ate a lot, and Mu‘āwiyah no-
The Events of the Year 60

'ticed him. 'Ubaydallāh b. Abī Bakr realized it and wanted to signal his son, but he was not able to do so, as his son did not raise his head until he was finished. When they left, he scolded his son for what he did. Then he returned to Mu'āwiyah without his son, so Mu'āwiyah asked, "What did your son, the mouthful, do?" 'Ubaydallāh replied "He complained." At that, Mu'āwiyah remarked "I knew that his food would make him sick."

I was told by Ahmad—'Ali—Juwayriyyah b. Asmā': Abū Mūsā came to Mu'āwiyah and entered his presence in a black burnous, saying "Peace be upon you, O Commander of the Faithful." He replied, "And upon you be peace." When he left, Mu'āwiyah commented, "The shaykh came for me to make him a governor, and, by God, I would not make him one."

I was told by 'Abdallāh b. Aḥmad—his father—Abū Sāliḥ Sulaymān b. Sāliḥ—'Abdallāh b. al-Mubārik—Sulaymān b. al-Mughirah—Ḥumayd b. Hilāl—Abū Burdāh: I entered Mu'āwiyah's presence when his abscess afflicted him, so he said, "Come over here, O cousin, and look." I looked, and, behold, it had been probed, so I said, "There is no harm to you, O Commander of the Faithful." Yazd then entered and Mu'āwiyah said, "If you were in charge of anything regarding the people, I would entrust you with this, since his father"—or words to that effect—"except that I thought differently from him about fighting."

I was told by 'Ali—Shihāb b. 'Ubaydallāh—Yazīd b. Suwayd: Mu'āwiyah admitted al-Aḥnaf, and he had begun his turn. Then Muḥammad b. al-Aṣḥāth entered and sat between Mu'āwiyah and al-Aḥnaf. Mu'āwiyah told (al-Aḥnaf), "We did not admit him before you, and you are ahead of him. You have behaved as someone who felt ashamed of himself. Just as we rule your affairs, we rule your admission. Desire from us what we desire from you, and it will be more lasting for you."

I was told by Ahmad—'Ali—Suḥaym b. Ḥaṣ: Rabī'ah b. 'Isl al-Yarbū'ī spoke for Mu'āwiyah, so Mu'āwiyah said, "Give

578. Abū Burdāh's father, Abū Mūsā al-Aṣh'arī, had been neutral during the first civil war.
579. That is, he offered to arrange a marriage for Mu'āwiyah.
him sawiğ to drink.” Mu‘āwiyyah asked him, “O Rabī‘ah, how are the people where you are?” He replied, “Disagreeing about such and such a faction.” Mu‘āwiyyah inquired, “So which of them do you belong to?” He answered, “I don’t belong to any of them.” At that, Mu‘āwiyyah remarked, “I think there are more of them than you said.” Rabī‘ah then asked, “O Commander of the Faithful, assist me with twelve thousand tree-trunks to build my house.” Mu‘āwiyyah asked, “Where is your house?” He answered, “In al-Basrah, and it is more than two farsakhs [twelve km] by two farsakhs [square].” Mu‘āwiyyah inquired, “Is your house in al-Basrah or is al-Basrah in your house?” Afterwards, one of Rabi‘ah’s sons entered the presence of Ibn Hubayrah,182 saying, “May God make the amīr prosper, I am the son of the chief of his folk. My father spoke for Mu‘āwiyyah.” Ibn Hubayrah asked Salm b. Qutaybah, “Who says this?” Salm said, “This is the son of the most foolish of his folk.” Ibn Hubayrah inquired, “Did your father marry off Mu‘āwiyyah?” When he replied that he had not, Ibn Hubayrah remarked, “Then I don’t think your father accomplished anything.”

I was told by Ahmad—Abū Muḥammad b. Dhakwān al-Qurashi: ‘Utbah and ‘Anbasah, two sons of Abū Sufyān, engaged in a dispute. ‘Utbah’s mother was Hind while ‘Anbasah’s mother was the daughter of Abū Uzayhir al-Dawsi. Mu‘āwiyyah was rude to ‘Anbasah, who retorted, “The same to you, O Commander of the Faithful!” When Mu‘āwiyyah responded, “O ‘Anbasah, ‘Utbah is the son of Hind,” ‘Anbasah said:

We were getting along properly, our enmity was straightened out formerly. Then Hind began to discriminate between us.

And even if Hind did not bear me, indeed I would be a sword which great men of glory employ.

580. Sawiğ is a broth of barley or wheat to which sugar, honey, dates, oil, or pomegranate syrup may be added. See EI’, s.v. Sawiğ.
581. That is, Rabī‘ah himself constituted one more faction.
582. This is either ‘Umar b. Hubayrah, governor of Iraq from 102(720) until 105(724) or his son Yūsuf b. ‘Umar, governor of Iraq from 129(741) until 132(749) See EI’, s.v. Ibn Hubayra.
Her father a great host in every winter,
and a shelter for weak people which does not collapse from strain.

His pots still exist
for whoever of the two valleys of Tihâmah and Najd might fear.

At that, Mu‘äwiyah said, "I shall never felicitate her in your presence."

I was told by 'Abdallâh b. Aḥmad—his father—Sulaymân—
'Abdallâh—Harmalah b. 'Imrân: One night Mu‘äwiyah heard that the Byzantine Emperor (Qaysâr) was heading for him with an army, that Nāṭīl b. Qays al-Judhâmi took over Filaštîn and seized its treasury, that the Egyptians whom he had imprisoned had escaped, and that 'Alî b. Abi Ṭâlib was headed for him with an army. At that he told his announcer (mu‘adhdhin), "Call [to worship] right now"—that was in the middle of the night.'Amr b. al-'Âṣ then came to him, asking, "Why did you send for me?" Mu‘äwiyah replied, "I did not send for you." 'Amr responded, "The announcer only summoned me just now." Mu‘äwiyah explained, "I was shot at by four bows."

'Amr advised, "As for those who escaped from your prison, they are in the prison of God, Almighty and Great. They are folk who are Sellers; you won’t have to go to them. But assign the blood price to whoever brings you one of them or his head, and they will be brought to you. Look to the Emperor [Qaysâr] and be peaceful to him. Offer him wealth and some of the garments of Egypt, and he will accept that from you. Look to Nāṭīl b. Qays. By my life, religion did not motivate him. He only wanted what he got, so write to him, and grant that to him, and congratulate him for it. If you should have power over him, [fine,] and if you don’t, then don’t be distressed about him. Devote your blade and your iron to this one who has the blood of your cousin upon him." All of the folk had escaped from Mu‘äwiyah's prison except Abrahah b. al-Šabbâh. Mu‘äwiyah asked, "What prevented you from escaping with your companions?"

Abrahah replied, "I was prevented from that by hatred for 'Alî,

---

583. That is, 'Anbasah’s own mother.
Between Civil Wars: The Caliphate of Mu'awiyah

not by love for you, and I cannot overcome it.” Mu'awiyah then released him.

I was told by 'Abdallah—his father—Sulaymān—'Abdallah b. Mas'adah584 b. Ḥakamah al-Fazārī from the sons of the family of Badr:585 Mu'awiyah moved from one of the districts of Syria to some province of his and settled in a residence in Syria. His camp was spread out for him on the surface of a plain overlooking the road, and he permitted me to stay with him. When the caravans, trains of camels, slave girls, and horses passed by, he said, “O Ibn Mas'adah, may God have mercy on Abū Bakr who did not want this world and this world did not want him.

As for 'Umar”—or Ibn Hantamah—“this world wanted him but he did not want it. As for 'Uthmān, he caused losses to this world and it caused losses for him. As for us, we wallow in it.” Then he seemed to repent, saying, “By God, it is the sovereignty which God brought us.”

I was told by 'Ahmad—Ali b. Muḥammad—Ali b. 'Ubaydal-lāh: 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ wrote to Mu'awiyah asking him to grant his son 'Abdallah b. 'Amr what Mu'awiyah had granted the father with regard to Egypt. Mu'awiyah remarked, “Abū 'Abdallah wanted to write, but he babbled. I testify to you that should I outlive him, I would cancel his contract.” 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ said, “Whenever I saw Mu'awiyah reclining on his arm, crossing his legs, blinking his eye, and saying to someone, 'Speak!' I had pity on that man.”

I was told by Ahmad—Ali b. Muḥammad: ‘Amr b. al-'Āṣ asked Mu'awiyah, “O Commander of the Faithful, am I not the most sincere person towards you?” He replied, “Because of that you have gained what you did.”

(According to) Ahmad—Ali—Juwayriyyah b. Asmā': Busr b. Abī Arṭāt spoke against 'Ali in the presence of Mu'awiyah while Zayd b. 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb was sitting (there). At that, Zayd assaulted Busr with a stick and injured him. Mu'awiyah told Zayd, “You turned on the shaykh of the Quraysh, a chief

585. 'Abdallah b. Mas'adah (or Mas'ūd) b. Ḥakamah b. Mālik al-Fazārī was a Companion who settled at Damascus, fought along with Mu'awiyah at Siffin, and led raids against the Byzantines. He lived to acknowledge Marwān at Ja'biyah. See Ibn al-Athir, Uṣd, III, 255–6.
The Events of the Year 60

of the Syrians, and you struck him!” Then he turned to Busr, saying, “You revile ‘Ali who is Zayd’s grandfather, while Zayd, the son of al-Fārūq, heads the notables. Haven’t you considered that he endures that?” Then they were both satisfied. Muʿāwiyyah also said, “Indeed I am above letting an offense be more important than my pardon, and foolishness greater than my forbearance, or a flaw which I shall not conceal privately, or a misdeed greater than my beneficence.” Muʿāwiyyah said, “The beauty of the noble [man] is virtuousness.” Muʿāwiyyah said, “There is nothing I like better than a bubbling spring in an easy land.” ’Amr b. al-‘Āṣ then said, “I like nothing better than to spend the night as a bridegroom with the pick of Arab wives.” At that, Wardān, the mawla of ’Amr b. al-‘Āṣ said, “I like nothing better than generosity between brothers.” Muʿāwiyyah said, “I am more entitled to that than you.” Wardān replied, “Do what you like.”

I was told by Ahmad—‘Ali—Muḥammad b. Ibrāhīm—his father: When Muʿāwiyyah’s official in charge of al-Madinah wanted to dispatch the courier to Muʿāwiyyah, he used to order his herald to announce, “Whoever has a need should write to the Commander of the Faithful.” Zirr b. Ḥubaysh or Aymān b. Khuraym wrote a charming letter and cast it among the others. It contained:

When the men beget their children, and their biceps twitch from age,

And their illness becomes chronic, they are crops whose harvests approach.

When Muʿāwiyyah received the letters and read this one, he remarked, “He has announced my own death to me.” Muʿāwiyyah also said, “There is nothing sweeter for me than anger which I swallow.” Muʿāwiyyah told ‘Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Ḥakam b. Abi al-ʿĀṣ, “O cousin, indeed, you have been very fond of poetry. So beware of flirting with women lest you dishonor honorable ones, and satire lest you dishonor a noble person and provoke

586. The Caliph ‘Umar I was called al-Fārūq.
587. See Mas‘ūdī, Murūj, V, 58–60.
588. That is, they had grandchildren.
someone ignoble. Praise is the bait of the shameless, but be proud of the glorious deeds of your folk, and say those proverbs that would adorn you and edify others."

I was told by Aḥmad—ʿAlī—Abū al-Ḥasan b. Ḥammād: Muʿāwiyah observed al-Thumā in a woolen cloak, so he slighted him. At that, al-Thumā said "O Commander of the Faithful, the woolen cloak does not speak to you, but the person who is in it does."

I was told by Aḥmad—ʿAlī—ʿAbdALLAH b. Ṣāliḥ: Someone asked Muʿāwiyah, "Which person do you like the most?" He replied, "The one who shows the most love to the people for me." Muʿāwiyah also said, "Intelligence and forbearance are the best things granted to mankind. If someone is reminded, he should remember; if someone is granted [something], he should be thankful; if someone is tested, he should be steadfast; if someone is angry, he should suppress [it]; if someone has power [over another], he should forgive; if someone does wrong, he should ask forgiveness; and if someone makes a promise, he should carry it out."

I was told by Aḥmad—ʿAlī b. AbdALLAH and Hishām b. Saʿīd—ʿAbd al-Malik b. ʿUmayr: A man was rude to Muʿāwiyah and did it constantly. When Muʿāwiyah was asked, "Are you gentle with this [man]?" He answered, "I do not come between people and their tongues as long as they do not come between us and our rule."

I was told by Aḥmad—ʿAlī—Muḥammad b. ʿĀmir: Muʿāwiyah criticized AbdALLAH b. Jaʿfar about singing. One day he entered Muʿāwiyah's presence while Budayḥ was with him, and Muʿāwiyah had his legs crossed. At that, AbdALLAH said to Budayḥ, "Well, O Budayḥ, so you sing." When Muʿāwiyah moved
his foot,—‘Abdallāh asked, “What is it, O Commander of the Faithful?” Mu‘āwiyyah replied, “The noble is joyful.” ‘Abdallāh b. Ja‘far also came to Mu‘āwiyyah accompanied by Sā‘ib Khāṭhir, a mawla of the Banū Layth, who was immoral. Mu‘āwiyyah told him, “Mention what you need” He did, and mentioned a need of Sā‘ib Khāṭhir as well. Mu‘āwiyyah then inquired, “Who is this?” When he told him, Mu‘āwiyyah said, “Admit him.” When Sā‘ib stood at the door of the audience chamber (majlis), he sang:

The traces of the settlements are desolate,
the winds play with them and the dripping rain.

And it has been without occupants
for eight or ten years,

And the saffron upon her upper chest,
the throat and the upper chest choking with it.

At that, Mu‘āwiyyah exclaimed, “Well done!” and took care of his needs. I was told by ‘Abdallāh b. Ahmad—his father—Sulaymān—‘Abdallāh—Ma‘mar—Hammām b. Munabbih—Ibn ‘Abbās: “I never saw anyone more suitable for sovereignty than Mu‘āwiyyah. Indeed people used to find him like the sides of a broad valley. He was not like the narrow, blocked opening,” that is, Ibn al-Zubayr.

I was told by ‘Abdallāh—his father—Sulaymān b. ‘Uyyaynah—Mujālid—al-Sha‘bī—Qabīṣah b. Jābir al-Asadi: I shall certainly inform you about those with whom I associated. I associated with ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb, and I never saw a man more comprehending with regard to knowledge (fiqh), nor better at discussing (things). Then I associated with Ṭalḥah b. ‘Ubaydallāh, and I never saw a man who gave more abundantly without being asked than he. Then I associated with Mu‘āwiyyah, and I never saw a man who liked a friend more than he, or who was

589. ِIṣfahānī, Aghānī, VII, 188: “a merchant.”
590. ِIbid., 189.
more the same in private and in public. If al-Mughirah were put in al-Madinah, he would not exit from any of its doors unless he did so by treachery.591

591. The text reads: abwāb, which could also mean "gates", but al-Madinah is not supposed to have been walled in this period.

592. Co reads: "by excuses." C adds: "end of the tenth volume, and, if God wills, what is subsequent will follow it."
ABBIBLIOGRAPHY

(Works Cited only)


Index

A
Abān b. Šāliḥ 101.
Abū b. Ziyād 16, 201, 202, 203, 204, 214.
Abūdān 13.
Abūsāid 19.
Abū al-Mālik b. 'Abdallāh al-Thaqafi 27.
Abū al-Mālik b. Marwān (Caliph 685–705) 14, 18, 46, 101, 102, 173, 224.
Abū al-Mālik b. 'Umayr 211, 224.
Abū al-Qādir al-Baghdādi 123, 188.
Abū al-Qays (Banū) 36, 38, 40, 42, 44, 73, 204.
Abū al-Rahmān 28.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Abān al-Qurashi 163.
Abū al-Rahmān b. 'Abdallāh b. 'Uthmān al-Thaqafi 137, 192, 193.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Abī Bakrah 26, 27.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Ḥabīb 45, 61, 63.
Abū al-Rahmān b. al-Ḥakam 205, 223.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Hannād 142.
Abū al-Rahmān b. al-Ḥarīth b. Ḥishām 153.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Ḥassān al-'Anzī 144, 149, 150, 151.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Mas'ūd 183.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Muḥammad b. al-Ashʿath 64.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Muḥriz al-Ṭumāḥī 133.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Muljam al-Murādī, see Ibn Muljam 22.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Qays al-Asadi 143.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Šāliḥ 74.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Samurah 85.
Abū al-Rahmān b. Ṣubh 119, 120.
Abū al-Rahmān b. 'Ubayd, see Abū al-Kanūd 111, 141.
`Abd al-Rahmān b. `Umar b. Umm al-Ḥakam al-Ṭhaqafi, see Ibn Umm al-Ḥakam 147, 166, 195, 198, 199.
`Abd al-Rahmān b. Ziyād 199, 200, 207.
`Abd al-Rahmān b. al-Walid 71.
`Abd al-Shams (Banū) 9, 107.
`Abdallāh 9.
`Abdallāh (title) 46.
`Abdallāh b. `Abbās, see Ibn `Abbās 3, 9, 14.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Balṭā‘ah 137.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. `Abbās, see Ibn `Abbās 3, 9, 14.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. `Abbās, see Ibn `Abbās 3, 9, 14.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
`Abdallāh b. Abī `Aqīl al-Ṭhaqafi 87, 124, 142.
`Abdallāh b. Abī Shaykh 72.
Index 235

'Abdallah b. Sabä' 49.
'Abdallah b. Salih 224.
'Abdallah b. Shawdhab 167.
'Abdallah b. 'Umar b. al-Khattab, see Ibn 'Umar 167, 208, 209.
'Abdallah b. al-Zubayr, see Ibn al-Zubayr 22, 208, 217.
'Abbad b. Ziyad 200.
Abhar 161.
Abrahah b. al-Sabbah 221.
Abraham 82.
Abraashahr, see Aparshahr and Nishapur 85, 179.
'Abs (Banü) 138.
Abu 'Abd al-Malik, see Marwan b. al-Hakam 117, 174.
Abu 'Abd al-Rahman, see Mu'awiyyah b. Abi Sufyan 215.
Abu 'Abd al-Rahman, see Hujr b. 'Adi 136.
Abu 'Abd al-Rahman al-Ishafani (or al-Ishbahani) 29, 72.
Abu 'Abd al-Rahman al-Qayni 91.
Abu 'Abd al-Rahman al-Thaqafi 69.
Abu 'Abdallah, see 'Amr b. al-'As 222.
Abu 'Abdallah, see al-Mughira b. Shub tabah 77.
Abu 'Abdallah Muhammad b. 'Umar al-Waqidi 11.
Abu al-'Amarra'ah, see 'Umayr b. Yazid al-Kindi 129, 130, 131.
Abu 'Amr 199.
Abu 'Amr 'Amir b. Sharahil, see al-Shabib 18.
Abu al-'Awar al-Sulami 148.
Abu Ayyub al-Ansari 94.
Abu Bakhr, Sakhr b. Qays, see al-Ahnaf b. Qays 81, 201
Abu Bakr (Caliph 632-634) 46, 222.
Abu Bakr al-Hudhali 78, 179.
Abu Bilal, see Mirdas b. Udayyah 81, 100, 196, 197.
Abu Hafis 200.
Abu Hardabah 189.
Abu al-Hasan al-Madaiini, see 'Ali b. Muhammad al-Madaiini 26, 27, 71, 72, 73, 78, 104, 177, 181, 188.
Abu Hurayrah 101.
Abu Idris 'A'idhalla b. 'Abdallah 216.
Abū Ishaq 74, 136, 137, 154.
Abū Ismā‘īl al-Hamdānī 183.
Abū Ja‘far, see al-Ṭabarī 33.
Abū Jād 176.
Abū al-Kanūd, see 'Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Ubayd 141.
Abū Khusaylah, see 'Īsā b. Khusaylah 107.
Abū Lu'lu‘ al-Dabbi 15.
Abū Maythā‘, see Muhammad b. al-Ash‘ath 134.
Abū Mikhnaf 1, 21, 24, 29, 38, 43, 44, 45, 50, 51, 55, 56, 57, 59, 60, 61, 63, 65, 68, 69, 122, 123, 125, 127, 129, 132, 136, 141, 144, 153, 154, 156, 193, 208, 213.
Abū al-Mughirah, see Ziyād b. Abīhi 28, 31, 77.
Abū al-Muhājir 103.
Abū Muḥammad al-Umawī 218.
Abū Muḥammad b. Dhakwān al-Qurāshī 174, 220.
Abū al-Mukhtār, see Mālik 216.
Abū al-Mukhtar 216.
Abū Mushīr 6.
Abū al-Naṣr b. Šāliḥ 44.
Abū al-Najīm al-Rajīz 111.
Abū al-Rahmān al-Ṭhaqafī 86.
Abū al-Rawwāgh al-Shākirī 51, 52, 53, 54, 60, 61, 62, 63, 65, 66, 67.
Abū Šāliḥ Sulaymān b. Šāliḥ 219.
Abū Salimah b. 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Awf 95.
Abū Sawwār al-'Adawi 99.
Abū Sharīf (or Sharīfah) al-Baddi 148, 149.
Abū al-Sha‘thā 100.
Abū Sufyān, see Sakhr b. Ḥarb 73, 74, 153, 202, 206, 215.
Abū Sufyān b. 'Uwaymir 129.
Abū Ṭalib 141.
Abū Turāb, see 'Ali b. Abī Ṭalib 98, 138, 141.
Abū 'Ubaydah Ma‘mar b. al-Muthannā 101, 104, 107, 111, 113, 188, 202, 205, 211.
Abū 04‘Uthmān, see Sa‘īd b. al-‘Ās 174, 175.
Abū Uzayhir al-Dawsī 200
Abū Ya‘qūb al-Thaqafī 211.
Abū Zayd al-Anṣārī, Sa‘īd b. Aws 18, 19, 104, 203, 205.
Abyssinian 187.
Adam 22.
‘Adas 204.
Adharbayjan 2.
'Adhrâ', see Marj 'Adhrâ' 147, 152, 158.
Adhrûh 8, 10, 92, 210.
'Adî b. Ḥâtim 42, 139, 140, 155, 156, 157, 160.
'Adî b. Ḥâtim, Mosque of 139.
'Adî (Banû) 155.
Admâ' 134.
Aelia Capitolina, see Īliyā and Jerusalem 6.
Afghanistan 18.
al-Ăfni 160.
Aḥmad b. 'Ali 16, 17.
Aḥmari 129.
al-Ăhnaż b. Qays, see Abû Bahr, Ṣakhir b. Qays Mu'āwiyyah al-Tamîmî 81, 105, 163, 201, 203, 219.
al-Ăhwâz 19, 90, 197, 198, 206.
'A'idh b. Ḥamalah al-Tamîmî 130.
Ajah, Mt, 157.
'Ajlân b. Rabî'ah 129.
al-A'lâ b. Maymûn 212.
Alans 20.
'Ali b. Abî Ţâlib, see Abû Turâb 2, 3, 6, 9, 11, 12, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 21, 22, 24, 27, 30, 31, 39, 42, 43, 44, 46, 48, 49, 50, 98, 123, 124, 126, 138, 139, 149, 150, 157, 211, 221, 222, 223.
'Ali b. 'Abdallâh 224.
'Ali b. 'Abdallâh b. 'Abbâs 19.
'Ali b. Ḥasan 126.
'Ali b. Muhammad al-Madâ'ini, see Abû al-Ḥasan 9, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 21, 26, 29, 31, 69, 70, 72, 73, 76, 78, 82, 85, 86, 88, 90, 96, 97, 99, 120, 121, 163, 164, 167, 170, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 183, 184, 185, 187, 188, 189, 199, 200, 201, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 218, 219, 220, 222, 223, 224.
'Ali b. 'Ubaydallâh 222.
'Ali (Banû) 100.
amir 37, 45, 81, 82, 84, 100, 117, 138, 154, 181, 203, 217, 220.
Amîr al-Mu'minîn (Commander of the Faithful) 6.
'Ămîr b. al-Aswad al-'Ijli 145, 147.
'Ămîr b. Shahrân (Banû) 144.
'Ămîr (Banû) 14.
238 Index

'Amr b. 'Amr 169.
'Amr b. al-'Āṣ, Abū 'Abdallāh, see Ibn al-Nābighah 8, 9, 10, 91, 92, 217, 221, 222, 223, 224.
'Amr b. Hāshim 74.
'Amr b. al-Ḥamiq 31, 98, 99, 129, 130, 137.
'Amr b. al-Ḥurayth 98, 99, 126, 140.
'Amr b. Murrah al-Juhāni 199.
'Amr b. Yarbū '188.
'Amr b. al-Zubayr 217.
Amū Daryā 164.
Anās b. Malik 85.
'Anazah [Banū] 144.
al-'Anbar [Banū] 134.
'Anbasah b. Abī Sufyān 19, 31, 92, 220, 221.
Anšār 132.
Anșārī 155.
Antākiyāh [Antioch] 93.
Aparshahr, see Abrashahr and Nishāpur 179.
Arab 11, 14, 27, 39, 117, 150.
Arabia 157, 163, 189.
Arabic 8, 45.
Arabs 3, 10, 12, 20, 36, 72, 74, 170, 214.
'Arafaṭ 6, 73.
Arch of al-Ja’d 83.

al-Arqam b. 'Abdallāh al-Kindi 144, 148, 152.
al-Arqam [Banū] 144.
Arrajān 28, 29, 198.
al-‘Arūd 167.
Arwād 172.
‘Arzam 143.
Asak, see Asik 198.
al-‘Ashā 184.
al-Alshal 119, 120.
Asḥā’ī, see Abū Mūsā 92.
Asḥāth al-Huddānī 99.
al-Ashtar 134, 136.
Asik, see Asak 198.
‘Āsim b. ‘Awf al-Bajālī 144, 152.
‘Āsim b. Faḍālah al-Laythī 85.
Asmā’ b. Khārijah al-Fazārī 142.
A’ṣur 131, 132.
al-Aswād b. Qays al-‘Abdī 38, 43.
al-‘Atīq 112.
‘Attāb 57, 58.
al-A’war Hudhāb b. Fiyāḍ 148, 150.
Index

'Awfi 99.
'Awfi b. Hiṣn 97, 98.
Aws b. Tha'labah al-Taymi 188.
al-Awzā'i 212.
Ay 78.
Aymān b. Khuraym 223.
'Ayn al-Ṣayd 8.
'Ayn Tamr 13.
Azd (Banū) 39, 86, 100, 129, 132, 134.
'Aẓrah b. 'Azrah al-Ahmasi 143.

B
al-Ba‘ith 104.
Bāb al-Fil 31.
al-Baddi, see 'Ubaydah b. 'Amr al-Kindī 162.
Bādghis 85, 163, 164.
Badr, Battle of 33, 198.
Baghdād 9, 19.
al-Bahrayn 78, 90, 123, 204.
Bahriyyah bt. al-Mundhir 203.
Bahurasir (or Behrasir) 45, 46, 51, 61.
al-Bahzī, see 'Īsā b. Khuṣaylah 109.
Bajilah (Banū) 132.
Bājumayrā 63, 64, 129.
Bakr b. 'Ubayd 129, 130.
Bakr b. Wā‘il (Banū) 111.
Bakri 112.
Balādhuri 1, 2, 8, 13, 23, 31, 33, 34, 82, 169, 179, 189, 190, 196, 206.
Balkh 163.
Baniqyā 112.
Baradā River 188.
barakah (blessing) 212.
barid (post system) 118, 163.
Barqāh 103.
barzakh (interval or barrier) 214.
Bashir b. 'Ubaydallāh b. Abī Bakr 218.
al-Baṣrah 1, 9, 13, 14, 15, 18, 19, 21, 22, 26, 29, 39, 56, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 76, 77, 78, 80, 81–2, 85, 87, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 103, 104, 108, 110, 111, 125, 126, 164, 167, 168, 170, 175, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 187, 191, 198, 200, 201, 203, 205, 206, 207, 220.
Baṣran 50, 58, 83, 126, 200.
Baṣrans 56, 72, 87.
'al-batrā' (free) 78.
bāṭriq (pl. baṭāriqah) (general) 20.
bay'ah (oath of allegiance) 2, 141, 218.
Bayhas b. Šuhayb al-Jarmī 58, 59.
Baykand, see Paykand 178.
Baziqiyā 160.
bedouin 188.
Bint Marrār, see Rabi‘ah bt. al-Marrār 110.
Bishāpūr, see Sābūr 30.
Book of God 46, 78, 120, 176.
Budayh 224.
Buhtur (Banū) 140, 160.
Bujayr (Banū) 19.
Bukayr b. Ḥumrān al-Ahmari 139.
Bukhara 178, 179, 190.
Bukharans 179.
Bukhārī 2.
burnous 137, 219.
Bushanaj, see Pushang 85.
Busr b. Abi Arfāt
al-‘Āmīri 14, 15, 16, 26,
32, 71, 96, 122, 165, 222, 223.
Busr b. ‘Ubaydallāh 16.
Byzantine 71, 88, 91, 94, 96,
122, 165, 166, 169, 172,
180, 183, 191, 192, 199,
216, 221.
Byzantines 20, 32.

C
Caliph 1, 3, 6, 7, 10, 21, 22,
44, 48, 84, 101, 140, 141,
148, 174, 210, 211, 214,
216, 217, 223.
Caliphate 2, 8, 210.
caliphs 20, 46.
Camel, Battle of 8, 30, 39,
42, 44, 85.
Caucasus 20.
Cemetery of Ibn Hisn 83.
Cemetery of Shaybān, see
Shaybān 85.
Central Asia 164, 189.
Christian 110, 189.
Christianity 42.
Christians 118.
Commander of the Faithful
6, 13, 16, 17, 27, 29, 30,
46, 47, 70, 72, 73, 74, 77,
101, 102, 120, 124, 127,
135, 139, 140, 141, 142,
145, 148, 149, 150, 173,
174, 175, 181, 184, 185,
186, 188, 196, 199, 200,
205, 213, 218, 219, 220,
222, 223, 224, 225.
Companion 19, 93, 157, 216.
Companions 85, 154, 200.
Constantinople 32, 172.
Cow, Sūrah of the 82.
Ctesiphon 45.
Cyprus 216.

D
Dabbah (Banū) 112, 180,
181.
Dabbis 181.
dafr (goat’s hair saddle girth)
115.
al-Dāḥhāk b. Qays
al-Fihrī 179, 182, 187,
191, 192, 198, 209, 213.
Dajājah bt. Asmā’ b.
al-Ṣalt Sulāmī 72.
Damascus 2, 144, 155, 188,
196, 210, 211, 214, 216.
Dār Ḥakīm 131.
Dārim b. Mālik b.
Ḫanzalah, (Banū) 107.
darajah (step) 172.
David 81.
Dāwūd b. Ḥayyān 26.
Day of Resurrection 48, 125,
214.
Daylām 22.
Daylamāyā 62.
Dayr al-Jamājim 64.
Dayr Ka‘b 64.
Deputy of God, see Khalifat
Allāh 84.
Devil 129.
devil 104.
dhirā’ah (or dhirā’) (cubit)
16, 53.
Dhū al-Ḥijjah 6.
Dhuhayl b.Šaʾṣaʾah 105.
Dhuλ (Banū) 134.
dihqān (landlord) 169.
Dijlah, see Tigris River 110.
Dirār (Banū) 181.
dīwān (military register) 105.
Diyala River 50.
Dubayʾah (Banū) 100.
Duwayyah 109.
Egypt 8, 13, 32, 102, 103, 196, 216, 221, 222.
Egyptian 103.
Egyptians 93, 217, 221.
Euphrates River 11, 62, 77.

F
Fadak 93, 172.
Fāḍālah b. ῤUtbaḥ (or ῤUtbaḍ) al-Anṣāri 94, 96, 216.
Fākhitaḥ bt. Qarazah b. ῤAbd ῤAmr 215.
Falj 110.
Farāwandah 92.
Farrūkh 164.
Fars 14, 15, 18, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 59, 70.
farsākh (six km.) 56.
farsākhās 62, 65, 178, 220.
al-Fāryāb 85.
fayʾ (booty) 11, 46, 81.
Fil (mawla of Ziyād) 166.

Index 241
fiqḥ (knowledge) 225.
Followers 216.
Fuḍayl b. Khadij 122.
Fuṣayl 217.
Fuqaym (Banū) 103, 104, 108, 118.
al-Furayyān 110.

G
Gawth b. ῤTonyī 159, 160.
ghādiyah (early-flying birds) 116.
Ghālib 158.
Ghālib b. Faḍālah al-Laythī 93.
Ghālib b. Šaʾṣaʾah 104, 105.
Ghālib b. Sulaymān 119, 120.
al-Ghanawī, see ῤAbdallāḥ b. ῤUqbah 47.
Ghariyyūn 144.
al-Ghariyyān 110.
Ghassān b. Muḍar 100.
Ghatafān, Banū 131, 132.
Ghifār b. Mulayk 86.
ghilmān (servants) 51.
ghulām (servant) 35, 85.
al-Ghūr 92.
Ghūṭah 188.
Ghuwayth 189.
Gilān 162.
God 8, 10, 11, 12, 13, 15, 16, 17, 22, 23, 24, 25, 28, 30, 35, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 57,
Index

God (continued)

God's Messenger 4.
Gulf 110.

H
Hābbān b. Mūsā 18.
Hābib b. Maslamah
al-Fihri 148, 216.
Hābib b. Shihāb
al-Sha'mī 18.
ḥadith (account about
Muḥammad) 2, 126, 154.
Hādramawt 33, 132, 158.
al-Hādramī, see
Sharik b. Shaddād 149.
Hādramis 160.
Hajār 204.
ḥājib (chamberlain) 74.
ḥaḍiḥ (pilgrimage), see
Pilgrimage 146.
al-Ḥājijāb b. Yūsuf 20, 64, 156.
Hājjār b. Abjar al-Ijālī 34, 35, 36, 142.
al-Ḥakam b. Abī al-'Āṣ
al-Thaqafī 86.
al-Ḥakam b. 'Amr al-
Ghifārī 85, 86, 92, 119, 120, 121, 163, 164.
Ḥakkāk 100.
Hamadhān 161.
Hamām b. Qabīsah
al-Namari 190.
Ḥamdān (Banū) 18, 58, 109, 131, 132, 133, 137, 140.
Ḥamdānīs 143.
Hammām b. Ghālib b.
Ṣa'ṣa'ah, see al-Farazdaq 103, 117.
Hammām b. Munabbih 225.
Hammām (Banū) 138.
Ḥamrā' 129, 156.
Ḥamzah (uncle of
Muhammad) 17.
Ḥamzah b. Šāliḥ al-Sulami 21.
Ḥanbal 109.
Ḥanī b. Abī Hayyah 143.
Ḥanīfah (Banū) 163.
Ḥanẓalah (Banū) 31.
ḥaras (guard) 128, 216.
Ḥarāt (Herat) 85, 120, 163.
Ḥarb 84, 106, 119, 154, 155, 202, 205, 206.
Ḥarb (Banū) 133, 176, 189, 190.
Ḥārīth b. Badr
al-Ghudānī 29, 83.
al-Ḥārīth b. 'Abdallāh (or
'Amr) al-Azdi 72, 76.
al-Ḥārīth b. 'Abdallāh b.
Abi Rabī'ah al-Makhzūmī,
see al-Qubā' 213.
Index

al-Ḥārith b. ‘Ayyāf al-‘Abdi 98.
al-Ḥārith b. al-Azma’ 143.
al-Ḥārith b. Ḥusayrah 141.
al-Ḥārith b. Jabalah
al-Ghassāni 98.
al-Ḥārith b. Muḥammad 183, 184, 185, 199, 210, 211.
Haṟmarakah b. ‘Imrān 221.
Ḥārūra’ 12.
Ḥarūriyyah 12, 31, 53, 100, 171.
al-Ḥasan b. ‘Ali 2, 3, 4, 5, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 14, 15, 16, 18, 138, 152, 154, 210, 211.
al-Ḥasan b. Rashid 178.
Ḥāshim b. Muḥammad 193.
Ḥāshimi 218.
Ḥātim 161.
Ḥātim b. al-Nu’mān
al-Bāhili 87.
Ḥātim b. Qabīsah 119, 120.
Ḥawāzin (Banū) 131, 132.
Ḥawrān 214.
Ḥawshab 156.
al-Haytham b. ‘Adī 78.
al-Haytham b. al-Aswad
al-Nakha’ī 143, 167.
Ḥaytham b. Shaddād, see
Shaddād b. al-Haytham
al-Hilāli 128.
Ḥayyān b. Zabyān
al-Sulami 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 33, 34, 193, 194, 195.
Hell 214.
Hell Fire 212.
Helmand Valley 18.
Hephthalite 164.
Hephthalites 163.
Hīdhmir 161.
Ḥijāz 1, 112, 167, 168, 173, 209.
hijrah (emigration of
Muḥammad from Makka
to al-Madīna in 622, beginning of Muslim ēra)
210.
al-Hilāli, see Shaddād b.
al-Haytham 129.
Ḥilālis 142.
hilm (forbearance) 127.
Ḥimyar (Banū) 216.
al-Hind 78, 103.
Ḥind (Banū) 129, 155, 156.
Ḥind bt. Mu‘āwiya 73.
Ḥind bt. ‘Utbah b. ‘Abd
Shams b. ‘Abd Manāf b.
Qūsāyy 17, 220, 215.
Ḥind bt. Zayd b.
Makhrakah al-Anṣārī 154.
al-Ḥirah 34, 36, 155, 194.
Ḥishām b. Hubayra 198, 207.
Ḥishām b. Muḥammad
al-Kalbi 1, 21, 33, 38, 122, 125, 126, 127, 136, 195, 208, 209, 210, 211, 213, 215.
Ḥishām b. Sa‘īd 224.
Ḥishām b. ‘Ubayd (or Muḥammad) 96.
Ḥishām b. ‘Urwah 136.
Ḥishām b. al-Walīd 211.
Ḥoms 88, 89.
al-Hubāb 162.
Ḥudaybiyāh 216.
al-Ḥudayn 142.
al-Ḥudhali, see Abū Bakr 78, 179.
Ḥudḥām 130.
al-ḥudūd [prescribed punishments] 46.
al-Hujaym (Banū) 104–5.
Huṣr b. 'Adi b. Jabalah al-Kindī, see Ibn Adbar 1,
30, 122, 123, 124, 125,
126, 127, 128, 129, 130,
131, 132, 133, 134, 135,
136, 138, 139, 140, 141,
143, 144, 145, 146, 147,
148, 151, 152, 153, 154,
156, 158, 162, 170.
ḥulamāʾ [forebearing people] 37.
Huwlān 28, 194.
Huwaym (Banū) 144, 158.
Huwrāh b. Mālik
al-Hamdānī 148.
Huwrān b. Abān, see Tuwayd 13, 14.
Hunayn, Battle of 186.
Huṣayn b. 'Abdallāh
al-Hamdānī 127.
al-Huṣayn b. 'Abdallāh
al-Kilābi 148.
al-Huṣayn b. 'Alī 5, 11,
138, 186, 200, 208, 209,
210.
al-Huṣayn b. 'Uqbah
al-Mardī 122.
Huṣayrah b. 'Abdallāh
b. al-Ḥārith 50, 55, 57,
60, 65.
Hūt (Banū) 133.
al-Ḥutāt b. Yazīd, Abū
Munāzīl 105, 106, 108.
al-Ḥuṭay'ah, see Jarwal b. Aws 117.
Huwayy (Banū) 105.
Huwwārīn 214.
I
'Ibādah b. Qurš al-Laythī 19.
Ibn 'Abbās, see 'Abdallāh b.
'Abbās 18, 94, 186, 225.
Ibn 'Abd Rabbihi 78, 79, 80,
81, 115, 154.
Ibn Abī 'Amr 85.
Ibn Abī Dhī 'b 217.
Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd 78, 80, 171.
Ibn Abī Sufyān, see Ziyād b.
Abīhi 77.
Ibn Abī Ziyād 168.
Ibn Adbar, see Huṣr b. 'Adī
154.
Ibn 'Amir, see 'Abdallāh b.
'Amīr 9, 19, 71, 72, 73, 74,
76, 181.
Ibn al-Ash'ath, see Muḥammad b.
al-Ash'ath 136, 156.
Ibn A'īth al-Kūfī 78, 166,
188.
Ibn al-Āthīr 19, 72, 86, 105,
163, 216, 222.
Ibn 'Āwn 186.
Ibn Barṣā al-Ḥitār
131.
Ibn Buzay'ah, see Shaddād b.
al-Mundhir b. al-Ḥārith
b. Wa'lah al-Dhulī 142.
Ibn Dajājah, see 'Abdallāh b.
'Amīr 72.
Ibn Durayd 85.
Ibn al-Faqīh 34, 42, 179.
Ibn Hajar 86, 216.
Ibn Hantama, see 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb
222.
Index 245

Ibn Hawiyah, see 'Abdallāh b. Hawiyah al-Sa'di 148.
Ibn Hind, see Mu'awiyah b. Abi Sufyān 73, 217.
Ibn Hishām 33.
Ibn Hiṣn, Cemetery of 83.
Ibn Hiṣn al-Tamīmī, see 'Abdallāh b. Hiṣn 100, 198.
Ibn Hubayrah, see 'Umar b. Hubayrah 220.
Ibn Ishāq 176.
Ibn Jadhl al-Ṭī'an al-Kinānī 59.
Ibn Jurmūz 89.
Ibn Khayyāṭ 4, 11, 19, 32, 95, 100, 102, 182, 186, 187, 193, 210, 216, 217.
Ibn al-Khayyāṭ (the Egyptian) 217.
Ibn Khāzīm, see 'Abdallāh b. Khāzīm 30, 69, 70.
Ibn Khunays 184.
Ibn Muffarrigh, see Yazid b. Rabi'ah b. Muffarrigh al-Ḥimyarī 203, 204, 205, 206.
Ibn Muljam, see 'Abd al-Rahmān b. Muljam al-Murādī 22.
Ibn al-Nābighah, see 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ 217.
Ibn Qitrah 117.
Ibn Qutaybah 13, 78, 170, 203, 204.
Ibn Rustah 112.

Ibn Sa'd 13, 21, 107, 113, 126, 179.
Ibn Shihāb al-Zuhri, see al-Zuhri 211.
Ibn Sumayyah, see Ziyād b. Abīhi 78, 153, 203.
Ibn Ṭābātabā 1.
Ibn Udhaynah al-'Abdi 182.
Ibn 'Umar, see 'Abdallāh b. 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb 94, 186, 187.
Ibn Umm al-Ḥakam, see 'Abd al-Rahmān b. 'Umar 195, 196.
Ibn Umm al-Ḥakīm, see 'Abdallāh b. 'Āmir 73.
Ibn Uthāl al-Nasrānī 88, 89.
Ibn Ziyād, see 'Ubaydallāh b. Ziyād 196, 197, 198, 205.
Ibn al-Zubayr, see 'Abdallāh b. al-Zubayr 94, 186, 209, 210, 225.
Ifriqiyyah 102, 103.
Iḥdāth fi al-dīn (innovation in religion) 46.
Īliyā, see Aelia Capitolina and Jerusalem 6.
‘īlī (lout) 57.
Ilyās of Naṣībin 11.
imām (religious leader) 70, 84, 125.
Imām 39, 84.
imārah (governorship) 22.
'imrān b. al-Ḥusayn al-Khuza‘ī 85.
Iran 6, 12, 14, 22, 163, 206.
Iranian 20, 206.
Iraq 1, 3, 6, 7, 11, 12, 13, 20, 21, 72, 86, 97, 119, 120, 148, 150, 156, 160, 167,
Iraq (continued)
194, 201, 204, 205, 209
210, 217, 220.

Iraqi 2.
‘Isā b. Khusaylah b. Mu’attib,
see, Abū Khusaylah and
Iṣbahān (Iṣfāhān) 6, 130,
135.
Iṣfāhānī 106, 109, 111,
117, 118, 124, 125, 129,
132, 133, 136, 138, 139,
154, 155, 168, 188, 189,
202, 203, 204, 214, 225.
Iṣḥāq, see Ibn Yahyā 77.
Iṣḥāq b. ‘Abdallāh b. Abī
Farwāh 101.
Iṣḥāq b. Ayūb 212.
Iṣḥāq b. Idrīs 99.
Iṣḥāq b. ‘Isā 19, 31, 164,
Iṣḥāq b. Khulayd 214.
Iṣḥāq b. Ṭalḥah b.
‘Ubaydallāh 142, 188.
al-Iskandariyyah 91.
Islām 38, 42, 54, 74, 79, 102,
148, 158, 168, 185, 193,
218.
Islamic 171.
Ismā‘īl b. Ibrāhim 186.
Ismā‘īl b. Nu‘aym al-Namīrī
127.
Ismā‘īl b. Ṭalḥāh b.
‘Ubaydallāh 142.
Isnād (chain of trans-
mitting authorities) 104.
Iṣṭakhr 14, 28, 83.
‘Itrīs b. Urqūb al-Bakrī
194, 195.

Iyād (Banū) 100.
Iyād b. al-Ḥarīth 183.

J
Jabal Ṭā‘ī 157.
Jabalah (Banū) 132.
Jābiyyah 216.
al-Ja‘d, Arch of 83.
al-Ja‘d b. Qays al-Tamīmī 83,
177, 178.
Jadhimah b. Awf 204.
Jadilah 160.
Ja‘far al-Sadafi 99.
Ja‘far b. Burqān 218.
Ja‘far b. Sulaymān al-Ḍubā‘ī
Ja‘far b. Hudhayfā al-Ṭā‘ī 33.
Jāhiliyyah 74, 80, 106.
Jāhiz 2, 59, 78, 79, 80, 81.
Jalūlā‘ 30, 160.
Jarabbah 94.
Jarībs (units of sixty square
cubits) 15.
Jarīr 195, 197.
Jarīr b. ‘Abd al-Masih, see
al-Mutalammis 122.
Jarīr b. Ḥāzim 169.
Jadhimah al-‘Absī 21.
Jarīr b. Yazīd 169.
Jāriyyah b. Qudāmah 105.
Jarjarāyā 5, 24, 50, 57, 60.
Jarwal b. Aws, see
al-Ḥutay‘ah 117.
al-Jawn b. Qatādah
al-‘Abshāmī 105.
Jayhūn 164.
Jerusalem, see Iliyā and
Aelia Capitolina 6.
Index

Jew 33.
Jewish 42.
Jews 118.
Jibāl 28.
Jibāl Sharwin 162.
jihād 12, 23, 24, 47, 49, 68, 193, 194.
al-Jīsr 195.
Jīsr al-'Abbāsiyyāt 12.
Jīsr al-Baṣrāh 19.
Jordan 96.
Juwayriyyah b. Asmā’ 173, 219, 222.

K
Ka’b 172.
Ka’b b. Ju’ayl 117, 118.
Ka’ b. al-Ashraf 33.
Ka’ b. Mālik (Banū) 26, 189
Ka’bah 24, 146, 152.
Kalb (Banū) 34, 188.
Karīm b. ‘Afīf al-Khath‘amī, see al-Khath‘amī 140, 144, 150, 152.
Kaskar 169.
Kath‘am (Banū) 132.
Kathīr b. Shihāb b. Ḥūṣayn al-Hārithi 142, 143.
kātib al-rasā’il (correspondence secretary) 217.
Katwah bt. Qaraẓah 216.
Khābir River 77.
Khālid b. ‘Abdallāh 163, 203.
Khālid b. al-’Āṣ b. Ḥishām 20, 70.
Khālid b. Ma’dān al-Ta‘ī 58.
Khālid b. al-Qāsim 101.
Khālid b. ‘Urfsuṭ 140.
Khālīfah 195.
Khaybar 33.
Khaybarīyyah fever 118.
Khulāfa’ (deputies) 29.
Khulayd b. ‘Abdallāh al-Ḥanafī 85, 86, 163, 170, 171.
Khulayd b. ‘Ajlān 214.
Khurāsān 1, 2, 18, 68, 69, 70, 72, 78, 83, 85, 86, 87, 92, 93, 119, 121, 163, 164, 170, 171, 175, 178, 179.
Khurāsān (continued) 181, 187, 188, 190, 191, 199.

al-Khuraybah 82.

Khusraws, see Kisra 132, 184.

Khuṭbah (sermon or speech) 70, 78.

Khuzā'ah (Banū) 132, 184.

Khuzistān 29, 197, 206.

Kidām b. Ḥayyān

al-'Anazi 144, 151.

Kīnānāh (Banū) 59.

Kindah, Banū 31, 130, 131, 132, 133, 140, 152.

Kindah, Cemetery of 132.

Kindīfi 158.

al-Kindiyyah 155.

Kirmān 206, 207.

Kisra, see Khusraw 168, 169, 217.

Kohl (antimony) 212, 217.

Kudrah (desert bird) 116.

al-Kūfah 1, 3, 7, 8, 9, 12, 13, 14, 16, 18, 20, 21, 22, 23, 30, 34, 36, 42, 45, 56, 60, 61, 62, 64, 65, 69, 70, 74, 76, 80, 82, 87, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 103, 111, 123, 125, 126, 128, 129, 131, 132, 139, 140, 143, 150, 154, 157, 164, 167, 168, 170, 171, 175, 179, 182, 184, 187, 191, 192, 194, 195, 198, 199, 200, 207.

Kūfān 12, 18, 58, 61, 140, 184, 196.

Kūfāns 12, 56, 57, 59, 72, 87, 128, 148, 149.

Kunāsah 141.

Kundur 162.

kunyah (agnomen) 215.


Kurds 14, 59.

kursi (chair, throne, or judgment seat) 97.

Kūthā 50, 51, 64.

Kuwayfah, see Little Kūfah 160.

L

Labīd b. 'Uṭārid al-Tamīmī 142.

Laylā 157.

Layth (Banū) 225.

Little Kūfah, see Kuwayfah 160.

Lubābah bt. Awfā al-Jurashi

M

Ma'bad b. Khālid al-Jadali 77.

al-Madā‘in 9, 13, 28, 42, 45, 51, 60, 61, 62, 66, 137.


al-Madhar 50, 51.

Madhhij (Banū) 131, 132, 133, 140.


al-Madinah al-‘Atiqah 3, 46.

Madinan 19.

Magian 14.
Index

Māh Bahrādhan 28, 30.
Māh Dinār 28.
al-Mahdi (Caliph 775–85) 46.
al-majālis (assemblies) 23.
majilis (assembly) 225.
Makhlah b. al-Hasan 126, 127.
Mālik, see Abū al-Mukhariq 216.
Mālik b. 'Abdallāh al-Khath'ami 180, 192, 208.
Mālik b. 'Ubaydallāh 88.
Mālik b. al-Rayb al-Māzini 188, 189.
al-Manṣūr (Caliph 754–75) 46.
maqsūrah (ruler's loge in a mosque) 75, 99.
Marghāb, see Murghāb 179.
Marḥab 33.
Marj 'Adhrā', see 'Adhrā' 144, 145, 146.
Marj Rāḥit 216.
al-Marrūdh 2.
al-Marzūqī 59.
Marw 2, 85, 92, 119, 120, 121, 179.
Marw al-Rūdih 2, 85.
Marwān b. al-Haytham 142.
Marwānid 20.

Maskin 3, 11.
masjid (mosque) 11, 15, 22.
Maslamah b. Muḥārib 14, 26, 72, 78, 82, 85, 86, 88, 97, 163, 177, 178, 179, 188, 189.
Maslamah b. Mukhallad 102, 103.
Maṣqlah b. Huballad al-Shaybānī 142.
Masruqān 206.
Mas'ūdī 101, 154, 168, 223.
mawāli (clients) 51, 216.
mawlā (client) 13, 14, 19, 45, 103, 164, 166, 216, 223, 225.
Maydānī 97, 106, 126, 130, 196, 212.
Maysān 168.
Maythā' bt. Khalīfah al-Ṭā'ī 139.
Mecca 20, 24, 26, 70, 73, 108, 111, 119, 127, 176, 186.
Messenger of God, see Muḥammad 8, 18, 38, 86, 93, 101, 102, 154, 157, 168, 188, 212, 217.
Mihrān 160.
Miḥsān b. Tha'labah 142.
mīl (two km.) 53, 56.
mīnbar (pulpit) 70.
Minjāb b. Rāshid al-Ḍabbī 29.
Minqar (Banū) 145.
al-Minqarī 68, 151.
Mirbad 104.
Mirdās b. Udayyah, see Abū Bilāl 197, 198.

Miskin b. 'Amir b. Unayf b. Shurayḥ b. 'Amr b. 'Udas 54, 55, 65, 68

Miskin b. Darim 168, 169.

Misma' b. 'Abd al-Malik III.

Miṣr (garrison city) 11, 22.

Mosque 75, 85, 97, 99, 101, 124, 126, 128, 129, 156, 171.

Mosque of 'Adī b. Ḥātim 139.

Mosque of al-Muʿādil 100.

Mosul 137, 150, 205, 206.

Muʿādhdhin (announcer) 221.

Mu'ammar 70.

Muʿāwiyyah b. Abī Sufyān, see Abū 'Abd al-Rahmān and Ibn Hind 1, 2, 3, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 14, 15, 16, 17, 20, 23, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 39, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 83, 89, 91, 93, 94, 95, 97, 98, 101, 102, 103, 105, 106, 107, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 136, 137, 141, 145, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 163, 166, 167, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 190, 191, 192, 195, 196, 199, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225.

Muʿāwiyyah b. Ḥudayj al-Sakūnī 91, 102, 103, 196.

al-Muʿaydi 196.

Mubarrad 12, 212, 213.

Muḍar (Banū) 58, 132, 140.

al-Mufaddil b. Faḍālah 103.


al-Muhājir 103.

Muhājirūn 10.

al-Muhallab b. Abī Ṣufrah al-Azdī 119, 120, 188.

Muḥammad, see Messenger of God 2, 8, 17, 19, 27, 33, 39, 187, 210, 216.

Muḥammad b. Abān al-Qurashi 175.

Muḥammad b. 'Abdallāh al-Thaqafi 165.

Muḥammad b. 'Ali 104, 106.

Muḥammad b. 'Āmir 224.

Muḥammad b. al-Asḥ'ath, see Ibn al-Asḥ'ath and Abū Maythā' 134, 135, 162, 219.

Muḥammad b. al-Faḍl al-'Absi 21, 170.

Muḥammad b. Ḥafṣ 178, 187.
Muhammad b. al-Ḥakam 213.
Muhammad b. Ibrahim 223.
Muhammad b. Iṣḥāq 166.
Muhammad b. Mālik 172.
Muhammad b. Maslamah 32.
Muhammad b. Mikhnaf 132.
Muhammad b. Mūsā al-Thaqafi 96.
Muhammad b. Muslim b. 'Ubaydallāh b. 'Abdallāh b. Shihāb al-Zuhri, see al-Zuhri and Ibn Shihāb 2.
Muhammad b. Sa'd 104, 210, 211.
Muhammad b. Sirīn 126, 127.
Muhammad b. 'Umar 96, 101, 102, 103, 166, 172, 173, 210, 211.
Muhammad b. 'Umayr b. 'Uṭārid al-Tamīmī 142.
Muhammad b. Yahyā 211.
Muhammad b. al-Zubayr 166.
n al-muhillun (violators) 2.
Mujāhid b. Jabr 172.
al-Mukhtār b. Abī ʿUbayd 4, 143.
Mulqā 109.
al-Mundhir b. Jarūd 203, 204.
al-Mundhir b. Māʾ al-Samāʾ 196.
al-Mundhir b. al-Zubayr 142.
Muqāʾis 112, 113.
Muqātīl b. Ḥayyān 68–9, 200.
Murād (Banū) 22.
Murghāb, see Marghāb 2, 179.
Murjiʿite 24.
Murrah (Banū) 156.
Murrah b. Muṣqīdī b. al-Nuʿmān 43.
Muṣʿab b. al-Zubayr 22, 63, 64, 129.
Muṣʿab b. Ḥayyān 200.
Mūsā b. ʿAbd al-Rahmān al-Masrūqī 3, 6.
Mūsā b. ʿAli 103.
Mūsā b. Ḥusayn al-Tālīhah 142.
al-Mushaqqaq 204.
Muslim II, 19, 32, 42, 45, 77, 82, 96, 150, 164, 205.
Muslim b. ʿAmr 90.
Muslim al-Jarmi 126.
Muslim b. Muḥārib 200.
Muslim b. Uqbaḥ al-Murri 209.
Nabhan 160.
al-Nadr b. Šāliḥ b. Ḥabib 21, 22, 24.
nāhiyah (subdistrict) 19.
al-Nahr, Battle of, see Nahrawān 13, 21, 23, 33, 36, 100.
Nahr Sūrā 42.
Nahr al-Malik 61, 61.
Nahrawān, Battle of, see al-Nahr 13, 21, 24, 31, 39, 50, 82.
Nahrawān Canal 24.
Naḥshal (Banū) 103, 104, 108.
Najaf 12, 155.
Najd 189, 221.
Nakha‘ 134.
Nakhlah 196, 187.
Nakhlah al-Yamāniyyah 186.
Nakhlat Muḥmūd 186.
al-Nakrah 110.
Narshakhī 190.
al-Naṣr b. Šāliḥ al-'Absī 144.
Nātil b. Qays al-Judhāmi 221.
Nawāwī 217.
Nawlah b. Fuqaym (Banū) 110.
al-Nibāj 110.
Nihāwand 28, 160.
Nīshāpur, see Abrashahr 163, 179.
Nizak Ṭarkhān 164.
Nu‘aylah b. Mulayk 86.
Nūḥ b. Qays 99.
al-Nukhaylah 12.
al-Nu‘mān b. al-Mundhir 98.
Nuṣayḥah 126.
O
Ossets 20.
Oxus River, see Jayhūn and Amū Daryā 69.
P
Palmyra, see Tadmur 164, 190, 214.
Paradise 68, 195, 203, 214.
patriicus, see batriq 20.
patrikios, see batriq 20.
Paykand, see Baykand 178.
Persepolis 14.
Persian 82, 203.
Persians 12, 112.
pilgrimage, see ḥajj 6, 70, 75, 87, 90, 92, 93, 95, 102, 103, 114, 146, 153, 164, 165, 171, 179, 182, 183, 188, 192, 198, 206.
plague 95, 167, 168.
Pleiades 106.
pre-Islamic 2, 80, 123, 155.
Prophet 2, 11, 39, 46, 81, 85, 106, 124, 200, 217.
pulpit 101, 102, 124, 125, 126, 127, 131, 180, 213.
Pūshang, see Bushānj 163.

Q

al-Qa'qā', Shawr al-Dhuhli 142.
Qabīšah b. Dhu'ayb 101, 102.
Qabīšah b. Dubay'ah b. Ḥarmalah al-'Absī 138, 143, 144, 149, 151.
Qabīšah b. al-Dammūn 33, 34, 43, 44.
Qabj Khatun 178.
qādī 18, 167.
Qādis 85.
al-Qādisiyyah 12.
al-Qaḥdhami 72.
qā'id (general, leader), see ᪜atroq 20.
al-Qāmīghān 42.
qamīs (shirt) 170.
Qarib 100.
Qārin 179.
Qarqisiyyā 77.
qasīdah (ode) 110, 111, 117, 119, 204, 205.
qasīdahs 111, 202.
al-Qasīm 189.
qasīmah (bridle or patch of sand) 110.
Qaṣīmah Kāzīmah 110.
Qaṣr al-'Adasiyyin 34.
Qaṣr Aws 188.
Qaṣr Ibn Hubayrah 42.
Qaṭān b. 'Abdallāh al-Ḥārithi 77.
Qaṭān b. 'Abdallāh b. Ḥuṣayn 142.

al-Qayn (Banū) 14.
Qayrawān 102.
Qays 'Ayān 77.
Qays b. Ḥanzah al-Hamdānī 216.
Qays b. al-Haytham al-Sulāmi 18, 21, 68, 69, 70, 73, 85, 200.
Qays b. Qahdān al-Kindī 131.
Qays b. Sa'd 2, 3, 9, 10.
Qays b. Shimr 133.
Qays b. 'Ubād 138, 155, 156.
Qays b. al-Walid b. 'Abd Shams b. al-Mughirah 140, 141.
Qays b. Yazīd 133, 134, 135.
Qaysar 168, 169, 217, 221.
Qaysiyah 69, 190.
Qazwīn 162.
qiblah (direction toward the Ka'bah in Mecca faced by Muslims when they worship) 24, 152, 167.
Qistānah, see Quṣṭānat al-Rayy 23.
Qubbayn 65.
Qudā'ah (Banū) 14, 132.
Qudā'ī, see Hudbah b. Fiyyād 149.
Qudāmah b. Maẓ'ūn 19.
Qudāmah b. al-'Ajlān al-Azdī 62, 243.
Quḥāfah (Banū) 144, 150.
Quḥistān 163.
Qu'rān 31, 34, 48, 78, 82, 99, 176.
Quraysh (Banū) 9, 14, 73,
Index

Quraysh (continued)
142, 143, 168, 186, 187, 188, 204, 208, 218, 222.
Qusayy 108.
Quss al-Natsif 151, 152.
Qustanat al-Rayy, see Qistanah 23.
Qustantiniyyah 94.
Qutaybah b. Muslim 164.
Qutaylah 156.

R
Raba'i 157.
Rabb al-Masariq bt.
Mu'awiyyah 215.
al-Rabi' b. Ziyad al-Harithi
87, 163, 164, 170.
Rabi'ah or al-Rabi' 184.
Rabi'ah (Banu) 50, 58, 140, 142, 151.
Rabi'ah b. Hanzalah (Banu) 198.
Rabi'ah b. Ka'b b. Sa'd (Banu)
105.
Rabi'ah b. 'Isa al-Yarbi'i
87, 188, 219, 220.
Rabi'ah bt. al-Marrar, see
Bint Marrar 111.
rahibh (plaza) 100.
ra'iyah (flock, subjects) 123.
rajaz (a kind of poetry) 177.
Ramadhan 32.
Rahmurmuz 198.
Ramithan 178.
Ramlah 214.
Rashid 130, 135.
Rasib (Banu) 39, 100.
al-Rawha 111.
al-Rayy, see Tehran 22, 33, 162, 188, 194.
Rhodes 166.
Ribi b. Hirash b. Jahsh
al-'Absi 138.
Rifa'at b. Shaddad 137.
Rudas 208.
rustaq (subdistrict) 137.
rusul (messengers) 38.
Ruwayyah 109.

S
Sabaiyyah 49, 145.
Sabat 61, 65, 66.
Sabat Bridge 62.
Sabrah b. Shaymān b.
'Ukayf 85, 86.
Sābūr, see Bishāpur 30.
Sa'd 80.
Sa'd (Banu) 68, 85, 142.
Sa'd, mawlā of Mu'awiyyah
216.
Sa'd, mawlā of Qudamah b.
Maz'un
Sa'd b. Bakr b. Hawazin
(Banu) 145, 152.
Sa'd b. Nimrān al-Hamdānī
145, 148, 151, 152.
Sa'd al-Qaraq 101.
al-Ṣadīf 33.
al-Ṣadīr 155.
al-Ṣadīr 186.
al-Saffah (Caliph 749–54) 46.
Saghāniyān 190.
sāhib (leader) 34.
Saḥīb b. Ghalib al-Hujaymi
19, 89, 90.
al-Sa'ib b. al-Aqra' al-Thaqafi
142.
Sa'id Kathīr, mawlā of the
Banū Layth 225.
Sa'id 80.
Sa'id b. 'Abd al-'Azīz 6.
Index

Sa'id b. Abi Sa'id al-Maqburi, see Abū Sa'id al-Maqburi and Sa'id b. Kaysān 153, 217.
Sa'id b. al-Āṣ, see Abū 'Uthmān 30, 94, 95, 103, 117, 118, 164, 165, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 184, 224.
Sa'id b. Kaysān, see Sa'id b. 'Abi Sa'id al-Maqburi 217.
Sa'id b. al-Musayyib 102.
Sa'id b. 'Uthmān b. 'Affān 187, 189, 190, 191.
Sa'id b. Zayd 100.
Sā'idiyyin, Cemetery of 132.
al-Sāj no.
Sajah 31.
Ṣakhir b. Ḥarb, see Abū Suḥyān 215.
Ṣakhir b. Qays b.
Mu'āwiyah al-Tamīmi al-Sā'di, al-Ahnaf 81.
al-Saksaki 216.
al-Sakūn (Banū) 152.
Ṣa'il 109.
Salāmān b. Muhārib 175.
Salamah b. 'Uthmān 17, 29, 97.
Salamah (Banū) 36.
Salāmān b. Sa'd (Banū) 148.
ṣalāt (worship) 126, 146.
Sālim b. Rabī'ah al-'Absi (or al-'Abdī) 22, 23, 44.
Salm b. Qutaybah 220.
Salmah, Mt. 157.
Samarqand 189.
al-Saq'ab b. Zuhayr 59, 122, 123, 154.
Ṣarāt Canal 42, 45, 46.
al-Sari b. Abī Waqqās 144.
al-Sari b. Waqqās al-Ḥārithi 142.
ṣarīmaḥ (bridle or patch of sand) 115, 169.
Sarjūn b. Mansūr al-Rūmī 216.
Ṣa'sa'ah b. Šūhān 38, 40, 43, 107.
Sasanian 45, 169, 179.
Sasania Sasanians 14.
Sawād 194.
Sāwah 23.
sawīq (broth) 220.
Sawriyah 208.
Sayf b. Wahb Abū Ṭalḥah al-Mawālī 85, 86, 100.
Ṣayfī b. Fasīl al-Shaybānī 138, 139, 144, 151, 155, 156.
Sellars 41, 68, 221.
Ṣabath b. Rib'ī al-Riyāḥī 113.
Ṣabbawayhi, see 'Abdallāḥ b. Ṣāmīd al-Marwāzī 2.
al-Ṣaḥ'bī, Abū 'Amr 'Āmir b. Ṣharāhil 18, 82, 97, 123, 136, 137, 183, 225.
Ṣabīb b. Rib'ī 142.
Ṣhadād b. al-Azma' 143.
Ṣhadād b. al-Haytham, see al-Hilāli 127, 128, 138, 142.
Ṣhadād b. al-Mundhir b. al-Ḥarīth b. Wa'lah al-Dhuhli, see Ibn Buzay'ah 142.
Index

shahādah (Muslim statement of faith) 8.
Shahrazūr 12.
Shāmir b. 'Abdallāh al-Khath'āmi 150, 151.
Sharīk b. al-A'war al-Hārithi 50, 56, 58, 59, 206, 207.
Sharīk b. Shaddād al-Hādrami 144, 151.
Shārūn, see Sellers 41.
Sharwīn 162.
Shaṭt Hindiyah 42.
Shaybān (Banū) 155.
Shaybān, Cemetery of Shaybān 85.
Shī'ah 44.
Shīhāb b. 'Ubaydallāh 219.
Shī'ite 21, 24, 50, 59.
Shirāz 14.
Shu'ayb b. 'Amr al-Umawī 101.
Shu'bah b. Qil'im 30.
Shurayḥ b. Ḥāni' al-Hārithi 143, 144, 145, 146.
shurtah (police) 15.
Shustar 206.
Ṣifīn, Battle of 12, 30, 31, 42, 131, 135, 148, 160, 190, 216.
Sijās 161.

Sijistān, see Sistān 18, 70, 78, 103, 200, 202, 204, 207.
Simāk b. 'Ubayd al-'Absī 45, 46, 47, 48, 51, 61, 62.
al-Sind 103.
Sirhān b. 'Umar b. Sa'īd 12.
Sistān, see Sijistān 18.
Šoghdīa 189.
Šogdians, see Šughd 189.
Sogdiana 189.
sufahā' (impudent people) 37.
suffah (porch or portico) 35.
Šughd, see Šogdians 189.
Suḥaym b. Ḥaš 219.
Suhrāb 42.
Sulaym b. Maḥdūj 36, 38, 40.
Sulaym b. Yazīd 133.
Sulaymān b. 'Abd al-Malik (Caliph 715–717) 46, 102.
Sulaymān b. 'Abi Rāshid 141.
Sulaymān b. Ayyūb 212.
Sulaymān b. Bilāl 15.
Sulaymān b. al-Faḍl 2, 7, 9, 77, 167, 168, 169, 217, 218, 221.
Sulaymān b. al-Mughirah 219.
Sulaymān b. Muslim al-'Ijli 171.
Sulaymān b. Šurad 30.
Sulaymān b. 'Uyaynah 225.
sultān (authority) 80.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Index</th>
<th>257</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sumayyah</td>
<td>74, 142, 154, 168, 199, 204.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sunnah (example)</td>
<td>2, 23, 46, 124.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sūq al-Ahwāz</td>
<td>29.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sūrah</td>
<td>42, 45.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sūrah (chapter of the Qur'an)</td>
<td>82.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surkhān River</td>
<td>190.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suwayd b. 'Abd al-'Azīz</td>
<td>101.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suwayd b. 'Abd al-Rahmān al-Tamīmī</td>
<td>142.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Syria</td>
<td>1, 6, 14, 28, 69, 75, 80, 88, 96, 101, 107, 145, 177, 204, 206, 209, 216, 218, 222.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Syrian</td>
<td>12, 201.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Syrians</td>
<td>10, 12, 39, 76, 88, 94, 145, 147, 150, 186, 223.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Talhah b. 'Abdallāh b. Khalaf al-Khuza'ī</td>
<td>188.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Talhah b. 'Ubaydallāh</td>
<td>39, 225.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Tāliqān</td>
<td>85.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tamīm (Banū)</td>
<td>29, 58, 70, 81, 106, 108, 131, 132, 140, 181, 188, 203.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tarābulus</td>
<td>103.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taym Allāh b. Tha'labah (Banū)</td>
<td>112, 142, 198.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taym al-Ribāb (Banū)</td>
<td>24, 35.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Taymī</td>
<td>38.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thāyyī (Banū)</td>
<td>42, 100, 139, 140, 156, 159, 160.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tehran, see al-Rayy</td>
<td>162.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tha'lab</td>
<td>113.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thaqīf (Banū)</td>
<td>14, 16, 20, 27, 33, 72.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Thumā</td>
<td>224.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Thuwayyah</td>
<td>168.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigris River, see Dijlah</td>
<td>24, 45, 47, 50, 61, 62, 110, 168.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tihāmah</td>
<td>114, 221.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Tirmidh</td>
<td>190.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tubay', son of Ka'b's wife</td>
<td>172.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ubayd b. 'Awf al-Yashkūrī</td>
<td>72.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tukharistān</td>
<td>69, 87.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ubadah b. Ḥiṣn</td>
<td>178.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ubayd b. al-Abraš</td>
<td>98.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ubayd b. Ka'b al-Numayrī</td>
<td>184, 185.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
'Ubayd b. Tha'labah (Banū) 83.
'Ubaydah b. 'Amr (al-Kindi) al-Baddī, see al-Baddī 133, 162.
'Ubaydallāh b. al-Ḥurr al-Ju'fi 144.
'Ubaydallāh b. Mālik 129.
'Ubaydallāh b. Muslim b. Shu'bah al-Ḥadrāmi 142.
'Ubaydallāh b. Ziyād, see Ibn Ziyād 16, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 187, 190, 191, 196, 198, 200, 201, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208.
Ubayy b. 'Umarah al-'Absī 21.
al-Ubullah 169.
Udhayb 160.
'Uḥud, Battle of 17.
'Umar 200.
'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz (Caliph 717–20) 102.
'Umar b. Bashīr 74.
'Umar b. Hubayrāh, see Ibn Hubayrāh 220.
'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb (Caliph 634–44), see al-Fārūq and Ibn Ḥantamah 21, 32, 46, 213, 217, 218, 222, 225.
'Umar b. Qays Dhū al-Liḥyah 143.

'Umar b. Sa'd b. Abī Waqqās 142.
'Umar b. Shabbāh 1, 9, 14, 15, 18, 26, 27, 28, 29, 31, 71, 72, 73, 78, 82, 85, 86, 88, 90, 96, 97, 99, 100, 101, 104, 119, 120, 121, 163, 164, 166, 167, 168, 171, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 180, 181, 187, 188, 196, 197, 198, 201, 210, 211, 214.
'Umar b. 'Ubaydallāh b. Ma'mar 203.
'Umarah b. 'Uqba b. Abī Mu'ayṭ 98, 142.
Umawī 218.
'Umayr 83.
'Umayr b. Abī Ashā'āh al-Azdi 55, 56.
'Umayr (or 'Umayrah) b. Yathribi 70, 164, 198.
'Umayr b. Yazīd al-Kindi, see Abū al-'Amaraṭah 129, 133, 135.
Umayyah 203.
Umayyah (Banū) 201.
Umm Abān bt. 'Utbah b. Rabī'ah 188.
Umm 'Amr 78.
Umm Ayyūb bt. Umārah b. 'Uqba b. al-Hakam 192, 193, 196.
umm walad (a slave woman who has borne a child to her master) 33.
'umrah (minor pilgrimage) 146, 153, 183.
'Unāq b. Shurahbil b. Abi Dahm al-Taymi 143-3.
'Uqbah b. 'Amir al-Juhani 93.
'Uqbah b. Nāfi' al-Fihri 94, 102, 103.
'Urwah b. al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah 143.
'Urwah b. Udayyah 196, 197.
'Urwah b. al-Zubayr 89.
'Urwah b. Abi Sufyān 6, 18, 19, 90, 92, 220.
'Utbah b. al-Akhnas 145, 148, 151, 152.
'Uthman b. 'Abd al-Rahmin 6.
'Uthman b. 'Affin I o, 13, 26, 31, 32, 43, 46, 48, 98, 101, 106, 123, 135, 137, 149, 151, 156, 174, 189, 211, 222.
'Uthman b. Muḥammad b. Abi Sufyān 206.
'Uthman b. 'Umayr al-Thaqafi 147.
'Uthmān b. 'Uqbah al-Kindi 125.
'Uthmānī 91.
'Uyaynah b. al-Nahhās al-‘Ijli 77.

V
Veh-Artakhshatr, see Bahurasir 45.

W
Wādī‘ās 143.
Wahb (or Wahib) b. Jarīr 100, 166, 196, 198.
wa‘id (child condemned to be buried alive) 107.
Wā’il b. Ḥujr al-Ḥadramī, Abū Hunaydah 77, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 148, 160.
Wakhsh River 190.
wālī al-‘ād (heir apparent) 183.
al-Walīd b. ‘Abd al-Malik (Caliph 705-15) 14, 102, 164, 211.
Walwalān 114.
Wardān, mawlā of ‘Amr b. al-‘Āṣ 223.
Warq b. Sumayy (or Sumayyah, al-Bajali 144, 152.
Warrād, mawlā of al-Mughirah b. Shu'bah 45.
wazīr (assistant) 84, 155.
White Palace 45.
wilāyah (governorship) 46.

Y
Yaḥyā b. Sa‘id b. Dīnār 101, 210, 211.
Yaḥyā b. Sa‘id b. Mikhnaf 132.
Yamāmah 163, 167.
al-Yaman 19, 26, 132, 135, 140, 152.
Yamānī 157, 202, 205.
Yamanis 204.
Ya'qūb b. Ibrahim 186.
Ya'qūbī 2, 179.
Yaqūt 12, 23, 28, 34, 42, 61, 64, 65, 86, 109, 111, 112, 144, 155, 160, 162, 168, 179, 186, 198, 204.
Yazid b. 'Abd al-Malik 46.
Yazid b. Asad al-Bajali 71, 145.
Yazid b. Hujayyāh b. Rabī'ah al-Taymi 146, 147.
Yazid b. Mālik al-Bāhili, see al-Khatīb 104.
Yazid b. Ruwaym 99.
Yazid b. Suwayd 219.
Yazid b. Ṭarīf 130, 131.
Yūnus b. 'Ubayd 2, 7, 9, 198.
Yūsuf b. 'Umar 220.
Yūsuf b. Yazid 129.

Z
Zahr b. Qays al-Ju‘fī 143.
Zā'idah b. Qudāmah al-Thaqafi 193.
zmāt (charity) 146, 171.
Zamyā’ 114, 115.
Zandaward 169.
Zarafshān River 189.
Zayd 131.
Zayd, servant of Nāfi' b. Khālid al-Ṭāhī 85.
Zayd b. Abī Ḥabīb 103.
Zayd b. 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb 222, 223.
Zīr b. Hubaysh 223.
Ziyād b. Abī Sufyān, see Ziyād b. Abīhi 145.
Ziyād al-Bakkā‘ī 11.
Ziyād b. Sumayyāh, see Ziyād b. Abīhi 73, 166, 217.
al-Zubayr b. al-‘Awwām 39.
Zuhayr b. Ḥarb 100, 166, 196, 198.
Zuḥḥaf the Kharijite 100.